

Chapter 533 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Everyone in the special department immediately became nervous. They placed their hands on their waists and held their guns.

Tanya reacted a little slower than Nora, but then her legs went limp. She stumbled toward the interrogation room. As she ran, she shouted, "Dad!" In the interrogation room, the people with guns could only be the two policemen. Then, who had fired the gun? Who had been hit? Nora ran quickly into the interrogation room. Before she could get close, the people guarding outside had already rushed in. The person in the lead was actually Ruth!

After they entered, Ruth's voice suddenly came from the interrogation room. "Ah!"

Nora sped up and rushed to the door. She hurriedly looked inside and saw that Karl was holding a gun in his hand. He was pressing it against Ruth's temple.

The others, including Captain Johnson, all pointed their guns at him!

Nora's gaze swept across Karl's body first. When she saw that there were no traces of him being hit, she finally relaxed. Then, she turned around and saw that Old Terry was lying in a pool of blood.

She rushed over and checked Old Terry's pulse, but she realized that his temple had been pierced by a bullet. There was no way to save him.

Nora frowned.

At this moment, Morris had already rushed over. He asked in a low voice, "What's going on?"

Captain Johnson still had a frightened expression on his face. His eyes were red as he shouted angrily, "Karl kept saying that he wanted to see Old Terry. He would only tell the truth when he saw Old Terry, so I called him over. But I didn't know that Karl hated Old Terry for misjudging his murder case back then. He killed Old Terry!!"

With that, Captain Johnson pointed his gun at him. "I want to take revenge for Old Terry!"

However, Karl blocked Ruth between him and himself and shouted, "If you dare to shoot, I'll kill her!"

Captain Johnson frowned.

Seeing that no one came forward, Karl said, "I didn't kill anyone! Old Terry is my boss. How could I kill him?! It was Johnson who killed him and framed me!"

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed silently. "What? Karl, do you think this is a drama?!"

Karl shouted, "It's true! Old Terry is my boss. He has my file! Johnson killed Old Terry and wants to kill me too!"

Captain Johnson frowned.

He took a deep breath and said, "What bullsh*t. You said I killed Old Terry. Should I test the trajectory?! Let's see whose pistol killed Old Terry!"

At this moment, both Karl and Captain Johnson had a gun in their hands.

Everyone would know after testing the guns.

Karl narrowed his eyes and stared at Captain Johnson.

He could not figure out why Captain Johnson would do this...

Two minutes ago, when Captain Johnson and Old Terry entered, Old Terry had even held his hand and said that it had been hard on him for so many years.

Karl sighed. "I just want to recover my identity so that I can return to my daughter."

Old Terry expressed his understanding. He even said that he himself had retired because he wanted to go back and accompany his daughter...

However, Karl was stunned. "You retired? Weren't you working all along? When did you retire?"

Old Terry was stunned. "I retired five years ago. Your matters later were..."

Before he could finish speaking, Captain Johnson suddenly took out a gun from his pocket. It was wrapped in tissues. He fired through the tissues and aimed the gun at Karl!

In his panic, Karl reached out to snatch the gun!

And there were only his fingerprints on the gun!!

If he went to verify it, there would be no evidence at all!

His original plan was to kill Old Terry and Karl. This way, he could bury everything!

But Karl had some skills.

Not only did he snatch his gun, but he also shoved him hard and rushed out. It was filled with Johnson's people outside. If Karl went out, he would die too!

However, Ruth just so happened to pass by outside at this moment. When she turned the corner, she was still talking. "Captain Johnson, we want to start the interrogation from Karl. May I?"

Then, she was quickly taken hostage by Karl.

He did not manage to fire that shot!

Now, it was big trouble.

However, Johnson had a plan.

Captain Johnson raised his gun and stood with the group of people around him. He said, "Besides, I'm from the special department. Why would I kill Old Terry? I'm comrades with Old Terry! Brothers! Old Terry even took a bullet for me. Everyone knows that!"

Captain Johnson's eyes were red. He was furious. "I want to avenge Old Terry!"

With that, he took another step forward and looked like he was about to shoot!

Karl pushed Ruth!

Ruth immediately shouted, "Captain Johnson, save me, save me!"

Captain Johnson looked extremely angry and he only felt that Ruth was meddlesome!

As Captain Johnson thought about this, he narrowed his eyes. "Karl, if you're innocent, then put down the gun and let go of Ruth!"

Karl sneered. "How is that possible? Do you think I'm mad? If I let go of her, I'll be the one dying the next second!"

Karl was very smart. He knew that there was a sniper in the special department. Therefore, not only did he hold Ruth hostage, but he even hid inside the interrogation room.

The interrogation room was airtight, and it had become his safe haven!

Karl did not wait for Captain Johnson to speak again and shouted, "Go out, all of you!"

Captain Johnson and Morris could only slowly retreat.

As soon as he went out, Captain Johnson slammed his fist on the wall in anger. Tears flowed down his face as he roared, "I'm the one who harmed Old Terry!!"

At this moment, inside the special department, Janson ran over. He shouted as he ran, "What's going on? What happened to my father?"

The dead Old Terry inside was his father!

When Captain Johnson saw him, he instantly patted his shoulder. "It's me. I'm the one who caused your father's death!"

Janson's eyes widened. Then, he seemed to have understood something. He pulled out his gun and rushed into the room. "I want to avenge my father!"

However, he was grabbed by Morris. He said in a deep voice, "Janson, don't be impulsive. You have to trust us. We'll give you a fair answer!"

Hearing Morris's words, Janson suddenly squatted down and covered his face.

He believed in Morris.

The door to the interrogation room was still open. Morris shouted into the room, "Karl, let go of Ruth and surrender. We'll give you a chance to defend yourself! This is also your best choice!"

Karl did not move. He wanted to leave!

The moment Captain Johnson killed Old Terry, he no longer believed in this place.

Furthermore, five years... Old Terry said that he had retired five years ago. Then, who had been giving him orders these five years?!

These matters were extremely terrifying when thought carefully. It made Karl only want to escape and return to someplace he was familiar with.

He held Ruth hostage and walked out of the interrogation room, avoiding the glass door and any place that could be hit by a sniper rifle. He moved out bit by bit. "Prepare a car for me! I want to leave this place immediately!"

Ruth was so frightened that her legs were trembling. "Give it to him! Captain Ford, give it to him! I don't want to die!"

Morris looked at the two of them. After a moment, he said, "Karl, have you thought it through? If you leave like this, then your charge of murder will be confirmed! You'll never be able to prove your innocence!"

Karl lowered his head. "Fleeing is better than death!"

However, when he said this, Captain Johnson suddenly pointed not far away and said, "But what about your daughter? Do you want your daughter to be a murderer's daughter for the rest of her life? Karl, aren't you afraid you'll traumatize your daughter by doing this in front of her?!"

Karl suddenly looked at her daughter.

Tanya was standing holding the wall. Her beautiful eyes were looking at him without a blink. Her eyes were filled with shock.

Karl tightened his jaw.

Tanya did not know what to do...

It was very dangerous now.

He might get killed if he stayed here much longer!

As she was thinking...

An angry voice was heard. "You killed my father. I'm going to kill your daughter!"

Janson stood up suddenly and raised his pistol to aim at Tanya! Karl was anxious. He let go of Ruth and shouted at Tanya, "Careful!"

Tanya's eyes widened.

Even Morris looked suddenly turned toward Janson, but it was too late. Janson had already pulled the trigger!

At the moment, just as everyone held their breaths, they realized that Janson had pulled the trigger but there was no sound at all.

Janson's hands were trembling. Only then did everyone realize that the gun was not loaded! Morris was shocked. He stood between Tanya and Janson and shouted angrily, "What are you doing?"

Janson looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, don't worry. I didn't forget I'm a cop!"

He knew what he should and shouldn't do!

Then why did he suddenly target Tanya? At this thought, Morris suddenly realized something. This was a diversion!

This was Janson and Captain Johnson's plan!

Indeed, Morris suddenly turned his head and saw that on the other side, Captain Johnson suddenly shouted at Ruth, "Get down!"

Ruth understood and hurriedly dropped to the ground.

Then, Captain Johnson calmly shot Karl with a cold expression!

Captain Johnson wanted to kill Karl!! Karl looked at the gun aimed at him and knew that he could not escape...

He subconsciously looked at Tanya.

For some reason, he suddenly thought of the dumplings that Jill had once made for him with three-fish filling...

Was he going to die here today?

Although he was unwilling, he seemed to feel a little better when he thought about how he was going to reunite with Jill.

These thoughts flashed across Karl's mind...

But at this point!

Unexpectedly, the falling Ruth suddenly raised her arm. Coincidentally, she blocked the bullet aimed at Karl!

Bam!

The bullet hit Ruth's arm, causing her to cry out in pain. "Ah!!"

The bullet was blocked. It seemed to be mostly luck, but no one had noticed that Nora, who was treating Old Terry on the ground, had suddenly picked up a coffee bean lying on the ground and thrown it at Ruth, hitting her arm. Nora narrowed her eyes. She had been performing CPR on Old Terry with another policeman.

However, she was actually looking around and watching the reactions of the people around

her.

Karl was saved again. He quickly came back to his senses and grabbed Ruth's arm, taking her hostage again! She, who had been trying to escape had been shot in the arm, causing her to turn pale.

At this moment, Ruth was so angry that her entire body was trembling.

She just wanted to receive credit. She did not expect things to end up like this!

Karl did not listen to her and dragged Ruth to the door.

At the door, Black Panther was waiting in a black car. He was originally going to pick Karl up from prison.

He did not expect to get into such a situation.

He immediately rushed to Karl's side and asked, "Brother, what's going on?!" When Captain Johnson saw him, he shouted, "Do you see that? That is Black Panther! He's here to receive Karl. They must have planned everything long ago! They planned to kill Old Terry!"

He was not anxious at all.

Luck was a factor when he picked up the gun earlier.

It would have been best if he could kill Karl. But even if he couldn't, Karl would still be frightened away. As long as he left, everything could be buried!

Karl roared, "I didn't!"

Morris stared at him. "Karl, I believe you. Put down the gun and surrender. I guarantee that no one can hurt you! I'll find evidence for you! But if you leave, your innocence will never be proven!"

Black Panther said warily, "Brother, we can't trust these people. They're too sly! Follow me. We can escape from here! Black Bear and the others are ready!"

Hearing that Black Bear was here, Karl was even more confident to escape.

However...

Was he really leaving?

Karl turned to look at Tanya, who was following behind everyone.

If he left, he might never see Tanya in his life again.

But if he did not leave...

"Brother, you have to go! You don't have any evidence to prove your innocence!" Black Panther was anxious and shouted vigilantly. The two of them hid behind the car and avoided the snipers.

The car was in front of him.

Once he got into the car, he could leave safely.

However, Captain Johnson shouted, "We can't let him go. We have to make him pay for Old Terry's death! He killed Old Terry!"

Karl narrowed his eyes and made up his mind.

He reached out and held the car door. When Captain Johnson saw this, he heaved a sigh of relief.

However, at this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded. "Who said Old Terry is dead?"

Nora's words caused everyone to look at her.

Morris's eyes darkened and he glanced at Captain Johnson. However, there was no surprise in his eyes. He sighed silently at this old fox and looked at Nora at the same time. He asked, "Old Terry isn't dead?"

"His heartbeat just returned to normal."

Nora said, "But his head was blown up at his temple. He's currently in a coma..."

When Captain Johnson heard this, his deep eyes were filled with contemplation, but he pretended to be excited. "What? Old Terry really isn't dead? That's great! He's in a coma. Can he recover?"

Nora nodded. "Of course. I have a way to save him!"

"Great!"

Captain Johnson was so excited that his eyes were red. "Old Terry is an outstanding police officer. If he died just like that, it'd be all my fault!"

Nora kept staring at Captain Johnson, hearing all his lies with interest. Originally, she had thought that Captain Johnson was a brainless and impulsive person. But at this moment, she suddenly realized that she had misjudged him!

Ever since Captain Johnson had entered the picture, he had been very troublesome. He was easy to anger and his hate for her was obvious. This had made her lower her guard, thinking that Captain Johnson was really such a person.

It was only after this incident that Nora suddenly realized that this Captain Johnson was really a sly old fox!

If he was really just a senile old man, how could Captain Johnson have killed someone and framed Karl? How could he have done everything so naturally? Having worked alongside these five years, Nora trusted Karl more.

Although Karl did not say anything, she had already guessed the reality of the matter.

Captain Johnson fired, and Karl snatched the pistol. There could be a ballistic analysis. However, Captain Johnson's fingerprints were definitely not on the pistol in Karl's hand!

Captain Johnson was careful enough not to leave any evidence.

And...

Old Terry's temple was pierced by a gun. The bullet trajectory was also calculated in advance.

Now, Captain Johnson was so calm, and he was also certain that Old Terry would not survive. What Nora had said earlier was actually a lie...

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes slightly. She did not look at Captain Johnson but at Karl. She said calmly, "Now, all the evidence points to you, but Old Terry is still alive. Whether you leave or stay is your decision."

Karl tightened his jaw.

After repeatedly breaking out of prison, he could already be the number one criminal in the special department. If he stayed, it would be even harder to escape next time.

Furthermore, the situation was not optimistic for him.

When Karl hesitated, Captain Johnson shouted angrily, “Nora, what nonsense are you talking about again?! Make him stay and bear the punishment! Even if Old Terry didn’t die, he was the one who injured him!”

Janson clenched his fists. “He’s my father’s murderer. Even if he leaves, even if I have to chase him to the ends of the earth, I’ll catch up to him!”

Karl looked at the people in front of him.

Not long ago, he was also one of them. It was because he looked evil and did not look like a good person that he was chosen by Old Terry to be an undercover agent.

After being undercover for so many years, he really wanted to go home.

However, there was no one at home, and it was meaningless to come back. Therefore, he had established an Assassin Alliance overseas. On the surface, he took money to do things, but was it not just another way to maintain peace?

After leaving this place, he could continue to live a happy life.

But was he really leaving? His gaze fell on Tanya, who was following Nora and stumbling out the door. On his daughter’s bright face, her eyes were stuck on him. There was reluctance, hesitation, and confusion in them.

Karl understood her thoughts.

She wanted him to stay, but she was afraid that he would die if he did. She wanted him to live, but she did not know what to do.

Karl suddenly lowered his eyes.

He turned to look at Black Panther and said, “Get in.”

Black Panther heaved a sigh of relief and sat in the driver’s seat.

The others immediately took a step forward. Morris said in a deep voice, “Karl, don’t make the wrong choice! We will give you justice! You have to believe in us!”

Captain Johnson picked up the walkie-talkie and said to the sniper hiding in the dark, who was searching for the best sniping position, "Find an opportunity and kill him! Take revenge for Old Terry!"

When Nora heard this, she glanced at Captain Johnson.

But she said nothing. Strictly speaking, Captain Johnson wasn't doing anything wrong. For the safety of the hostages, shooting was inevitable.

Just as she was worried that Karl would really leave, she saw him grab Ruth and say to Black Panther in the car, "Go!"

Black Panther was stunned and shouted, "Brother!"

Karl did not speak. His eyes were very firm. "Go!"

Black Panther bit his lips in anger. However, when he saw the people slowly surrounding him, he knew that if he did not leave now, he would probably be trapped if the sniper found his position.

If his brother would not leave, then he had to leave first to find a chance to save him.

Thinking of this, Black Panther became ruthless. He stepped on the accelerator and rushed out!

Other police officers chased after him, but unfortunately, they could never catch a top killer like Black Panther.

Karl pushed Ruth and slowly raised his hand.

Captain Johnson instantly picked up his gun and was about to shoot Karl when Morris suddenly held his hand and said in a deep voice, "Captain Johnson, he has already surrendered. It's probably inappropriate for you to kill him, right?"

Captain Johnson took a deep breath and shouted angrily, "He killed Old Terry!"

Janson, who was beside him, rushed forward.

Ruth thought that Janson was here to pick her up and reached out. However, the next moment, Janson circled around Ruth and rushed to Karl, waving his fists at him!

With a bang, Janson hit him in the face.

Karl did not dodge. He stood there and stared at Janson. "You're Old Terry's son, so I'll take this punch!"

Just as Janson was about to hit him again, someone rushed forward and stopped him. "Alright, alright. That's enough. We have to follow the law!"

"Yes, we can't beat others up in private... Let's go see your father quickly!"

Janson was taken away by the other colleagues. A group of people immediately rushed forward and detained Karl. They twisted his arms behind his back and restrained him.

At this moment, Karl's face was swollen and he did not look good.

However, he still looked up and gave Tanya a reassuring look.

Tanya's eyes instantly turned red. She held Nora's hand. "He's innocent!"

Nora patted her hand. "You should go back for now. I'll handle the matters here."

Tanya knew that it was useless for her to stay. Instead, Janson and the others could use her to deal with Karl. Therefore, she nodded and left.

Only then did Nora enter the department. She did not look at the things in the hall and turned to the interrogation room.

Someone had already called 911. The medic rushed in and was looking at Old Terry's eyes in the interrogation room. The medic frowned. "Well, it's useless even if we pick him up." "Yes, his temple was pierced. He's probably already brain dead. There's no way to save him."

The forensic doctor in the special department also sighed. "I don't think it's necessary, either."

Faced with their words, Nora lowered her eyes and said, "You don't have to care about him. You just have to take him to the hospital. My medical team will take over the treatment for Old Terry."

The medic was stunned and looked at her in confusion. "You are?"

"I'm Anti."

Nora showed her identification card. The few medics instantly nodded. "Okay."

They lifted the stretcher and placed Old Terry on it. As soon as they went out, they were stopped by someone in the hall.

At this moment, a group of people from the special department was gathered in the hall. At a glance, there should be more than a hundred people.

At this moment, everyone was in a frenzy. Some were comforting Janson, while others stood behind Captain Johnson, opposite Morris.

Janson clenched his fists tightly, his body was slightly trembling. "Captain Ford, my father is here while Karl is lying in the interrogation room. Are you still protecting him? Why can't you give the judgment now?!"

Captain Johnson also said, "Morris, why on earth are you protecting him? He's a criminal! A murderer! Are you going to protect him just because he's close to Nora? Now, all the evidence is here. With all the evidence, why don't you convict him immediately?!"

Logically speaking, convictions were a matter of the court.

However, this department was relatively special. Because of the complexity of the cases they investigated, the special department was independent of all departments.

Therefore, the special department was completely qualified to judge Karl.

Janson pointed at Karl and shouted angrily, "Captain Ford, my father has been a police officer his entire life and has never done anything to let the people down! He has more than twenty wounds on his body, all of which are scars from being injured during missions. Now, They act up and hurt every time the weather gets rainy! But even so, he has never troubled the country... Why should a person like him accept such an outcome?! I want Karl Moore to

be sentenced to death! He deliberately killed someone! I want to execute him with my own hands!”

Janson was agitated.

Even if Nora said that she could treat Old Terry, he did not have much hope. His temple was pierced, so how could he still live? Captain Johnson sighed at the side. “Janson, don’t be agitated. Morris will definitely give everyone an explanation.”

Janson wiped his tears and looked at Morris fiercely.

Morris pursed his lips and said slowly, “We still need to investigate this matter...”

“What else is there to investigate?!” Captain Johnson couldn’t stand it anymore. He glared at Morris angrily. “Or do you believe this murderer and want to investigate me?! I’ve been comrades with Old Terry for more than twenty years. We’re brothers. Don’t you believe me?!”

As soon as he said this, Janson suddenly raised his head and glared at Morris. “Captain Ford, my father and Captain Johnson are good brothers. I trust Captain Johnson. Besides, the evidence is conclusive. What else is there to investigate? Are you planning to subside his trial because he has let go of the hostage and turned himself in? I don’t agree! I’ll never forgive a murderer!”

With that, he looked around. “Brothers, help me! I only want to get justice for my father!”

Everyone in the special department was brave. Many of their comrades had died during missions.

Regarding Janson’s encounter, they were very concerned. From their point of view, Captain Johnson and Old Terry were brothers. Furthermore, with the evidence available, how could they still suspect Captain Johnson?!

Therefore, everyone said:

“Captain Ford, you have to give an explanation for this!”

“Yes, he killed a hero. Old Terry is an existence we all respect!”

“Captain Ford, you can’t shield the murderer!”

At this moment, the people from the special department stood behind Janson and Captain Johnson.

Johnson narrowed his eyes. Previously, he had used many methods but the people from the special department did not stand on his side. But now, with Old Terry's death, so many people had leaned over to his side.

Perhaps this was because humans innately sympathized with the weak.

Morris stared at those people, his eyes persistent and cold. However, he stood in front of Karl, opposite his colleague.

He slowly said, "It's not that I'm protecting the murderer, but this case can't be closed yet. We can't let any suspects off, but we can't malign any innocent people either!"

Janson's eyes were red as he stared at him. After a moment, he sneered. "Okay, okay! I understand!"

He wiped his tears.

Captain Johnson seemed to be furious as well. "Morris, what the hell do you mean? If you suspect me, just arrest me! What are we after in this industry? The murderer is right behind you. You don't care about him and want to aim the gun at your comrade?!"

Captain Johnson was clearly stirring up everyone's emotions.

Everyone looked at Morris.

Morris took a deep breath.

Captain Johnson had orchestrated the situation very carefully. He did not leave any evidence behind. The only way to overturn the case was with Old Terry.

Morris said, "When Old Terry wakes up, we'll ask him before convicting Karl!"

Captain Johnson sneered. "With just one sentence from Nora, are you sure that Old Terry can wake up? Morris, his temples have exploded. How would he ever come back to life? If Old Terry doesn't wake up, you won't judge Karl? If he stays in a vegetative state his entire life, will Karl wait for him forever?!"

Morris was speechless.

Nora walked out hearing all the commotion. She narrowed her eyes and suddenly said, "Don't wait forever. Give me three days. I'll wake Old Terry up!"

The moment Nora spoke, Janson and the others' gazes fell on her. It reduced the pressure on Morris.

Janson's gaze landed on Old Terry lying on the stretcher.

Earlier, he had seen his father's body. His father's heart had stopped beating. Blood and brain matter had oozed out from his temples. It was a tragic sight.

His colleagues had pulled him away.

At this moment, he turned around and saw that Old Terry's chest was heaving weakly on the stretcher. It was obvious that he was nearly dead.

Janson's eyes turned even redder. He asked with a trembling voice, "Can you really treat him?"

Nora nodded.

However, Ruth, who had finished treating her wounds, held her arm and said, "Miss Smith, what the doctors said earlier clearly indicated that he can't be saved. It's not good for Old Terry if you forcefully keep him alive! His brain is already dead, so why are you torturing his body like this? Just to avoid punishment for Karl?"

When Ruth said this, Janson instantly became furious. "Nora, what on earth is going on? Can't my father's illness be treated? Is there really no such precedent in the world?"

Nora lowered her eyes and glanced at Ruth coldly. Then, she looked at Janson and lowered her head. "Indeed, there are no cases of brain dead patients waking up yet."

These words made Janson's eyes instantly become even more furious. He was like a lion, as if he wanted to rush over and bite her the next moment.

Nora was not afraid at all. She stared at him and said, "But I have a method that might allow your father to obtain a new life. I wonder if you want to use it?"

Janson was stunned. "What way?"

Nora sighed silently. "What is our special department investigating?"

Janson frowned and quickly came back to his senses. "Genetic medicine?"

Nora nodded.

Then, under everyone's gaze, she said slowly, "Everyone has seen the power of gene serum. It can change the DNA and make the body stronger. As our forensic doctor, I have been researching this gene serum for a while now. I've cracked this gene serum!"

With this sentence, everyone looked at her.

Even Morris looked at her in disbelief.

Ruth's eyes widened. "How... how is this possible?"

Nora said calmly, "How is it not?"

Ruth bit her lip and did not speak. Instead, it was Captain Johnson who sneered. "Nora, I think you're really putting the cart before the horse! The case we want to investigate is the human body experiment corresponding to the gene serum! This gene serum itself is an illegal substance. You actually want to use this thing?"

Nora raised her eyebrows. "In order to save people, even if it's poison, we have to use it, right?"

Captain Johnson snorted. "But what's the difference between this and a human trial?!"

The difference...

Of course there was a difference.

Nora lowered her eyes. "Old Terry is already dead anyway. What if the gene serum really revived him?"

She pointed at Old Terry's head and said, "The gene serum has the ability to revive cells, so it can extend bones and bring people back to life. In theory, as long as a person is still breathing, this serum should work!"

Captain Johnson still wanted to say something, but Nora looked straight at Janson. "I'm telling you now, this is the only way. There might be a 50% chance of making your father wake up. So are you going to use it or not?"

Janson said without hesitation, "Yes!"

He did not even need to think about it.

Captain Johnson hurriedly said, "Janson, you..."

Before he could finish, he was stopped by Nora. "Captain Johnson, what are you thinking by stopping me from using the gene serum? Are you that afraid that Old Terry will wake up?"

Captain Johnson choked on her words and shouted angrily, "Of course not. If Old Terry can wake up, I'll be happier than anyone else! But you're using his body as an experiment. This is really unacceptable! Besides, what if this gene serum has side effects?! Old Terry is already brain dead. Are you going to insult his corpse and beliefs?"

Janson hesitated.

However, Nora seemed to have expected this. She still said casually, "Therefore, I won't choose Old Terry as my test subject. I'll use it on someone else first."

Janson subconsciously asked, "Who?"

"My cousin, Quentin."

Nora said slowly, word for word, "You all know that my third brother has all his bones broken. With the current medical knowledge, it's impossible for him to stand up again. The gene serum can definitely treat people who have broken their bones. I'll inject the gene serum into Quentin today. After observation, if his health improves, I'll give it to Old Terry. Is that okay?"

Of course!

If she was confident enough to use it on her own brother, why couldn't it be used on Old Terry?

Janson hurriedly nodded and decided. "Yes!"

Nora looked at Morris again and raised her eyebrows to ask, "Captain Ford, can I?"

She was asking if she could use the gene serum.

Morris looked at Captain Johnson.

Actually, it was illegal for them to use this drug

now.

But to save Old Terry... Morris said in a deep voice, "Yes."

The matter was settled.

Seeing that he could no longer interrupt, a dark light flashed across Captain Johnson's eyes.

The people gathered in the hall quickly dispersed. Captain Johnson entered the office with Ruth following behind him. "Captain Johnson, do you need me to help you interrogate Karl and make him confess?" "No, it's fine."

Captain Johnson said, "Our best option is to stay put for now!"

He had the absolute advantage. How could he lose?

Besides...

Old Terry's temple had exploded, and his brain matter had come oozing out. He was already dead. Captain Johnson did not believe that Nora could treat Old Terry. Also, what gene serum... Heh, how could it be so effective?

He was waiting to hear the news of Old Terry's death and then send Karl to the guillotine. Then, he would make use of this matter to pull Morris down from his seat!

It was really killing three birds with one stone!

However, Ruth reminded her worriedly, "I heard that Nora took Old Terry to the hospital where her medical team is. And she will treat Quentin tonight."

Captain Johnson sneered. "Okay. Then we'll wait for her treatment results tomorrow!"

In the hospital.

Quentin lay there with a straight face.

Lily stood beside him and was looking at his vitals on the monitors. Quentin was now completely out of danger. His physical indicators had returned to normal. Other than the shattered bones that had not healed, there was no danger.

He lay there weakly, looking at the ceiling.

Then, the door was pushed open.

Nora brought Janson and another member of the special department in.

Quentin glanced at her and said in surprise, "Sister, you changed men again?"
You even changed to two men at once?

Nora: "?"

She frowned and did not react to his words. Beside her, Lily coughed. Quentin instantly stopped talking

Quentin was like a stupid teenager.

Nora ignored his words and said, "I found a way to treat you."

Quentin's eyes instantly lit up as he looked at her. "I knew you could do it!
Treat me quickly. I'm bored to death, and I'm still being bullied every day!"

With that, he glared at Lily.

Nora followed his gaze and looked at Lily in confusion. She saw Lily looking to the side. Lily did not even dare to look her in the eye.

Nora: "..."

She did not speak and just looked at Lily silently. After a while, Lily could not help but say, "Alright, alright. I admit it. Boss, I just pinched his face!"

"Did you just pinch my face?"

Quentin shouted angrily. Lily: "...Oh, I touched his chest."

Nora and Quentin continued to watch her whine.

Lily: "...I touched his thigh."

Nora still did not speak.

Lily was anxious. "That's all! Oh, right, and his Adam's apple."

Quentin looked like he had been humiliated.

Lily was shocked. "Why are you complaining to my boss like this? What if she fires me or lowers my salary? Don't say anything else. I'll be responsible!"
"Okay."

Quentin's expression was natural. After saying this, he looked at Nora. "What is the treatment method? What are these two men here for?"

Nora was silent for a moment before explaining, "I'm using the gene serum I extracted to treat you now. Because we don't know how effective it is or if there are any side effects, these two are here to record your reactions."

Upon hearing this, Quentin immediately pursed his lips. "Heh, as a peerless expert, I won't make a sound even if you scrape my bones to treat my wounds. Come on!"

Then, he acted as if he was going to the execution ground.

Nora raised her eyebrows.

She had said that on purpose.

Quentin loved to show off. She had deliberately told him that these two people were here to observe him. Quentin would definitely be very cooperative and not make a sound.

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, "Let's start."

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. “Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?”

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin’s appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, “Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father’s sake, I want her to try.”

“...Okay, I respect your choice.”

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry’s illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson’s original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. "Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith's gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!"

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: "Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!"

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: "Is the news reliable?"

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: "I guarantee it's true! They're doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!"

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, “Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!”

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, “You talk too much. I’m the one handling Mr. Hunt’s romantic matters. Do you have any experience?”

Sean: “No, what do you think we should do?”

Lawrence smiled. “We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!”

Sean: “...How is this different from what I said earlier?”

Lawrence said, “Of course there’s a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss...”

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, “Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time.”

Austin sneered and replied, “Stop me if you can.”

Ian narrowed her eyes. “I know you’re very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!”

Austin’s tone was still light. “I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you’re not qualified to scare me, my dear!”

Ian was extremely angry. “Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?”

Austin smiled. “I’m really am not.”

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, “Aren’t you afraid of the Hunts?”

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what

it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that

Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

“Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I've seen. It's simply too awesome. I didn't expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?”

“I'm listening.” Captain Johnson came back to his senses. “I'll come to the hospital immediately.” “Okay.”

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson's car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora's cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He's here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I'll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman’s exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, “Forget it, I can’t sleep.”

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry’s familiar voice. “Mommy ~” Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean’s car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

“Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven’t seen you in days. I miss you so much!” Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 534 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

He held Ruth hostage and walked out of the interrogation room, avoiding the glass door and any place that could be hit by a sniper rifle. He moved out bit by bit. “Prepare a car for me! I want to leave this place immediately!”

Ruth was so frightened that her legs were trembling. “Give it to him! Captain Ford, give it to him! I don’t want to die!”

Morris looked at the two of them. After a moment, he said, “Karl, have you thought it through? If you leave like this, then your charge of murder will be confirmed! You’ll never be able to prove your innocence!”

Karl lowered his head. “Fleeing is better than death!”

However, when he said this, Captain Johnson suddenly pointed not far away and said, “But what about your daughter? Do you want your daughter to be a murderer’s daughter for the rest of her life? Karl, aren’t you afraid you’ll traumatize your daughter by doing this in front of her?!”

Karl suddenly looked at her daughter.

Tanya was standing holding the wall. Her beautiful eyes were looking at him without a blink. Her eyes were filled with shock.

Karl tightened his jaw.

Tanya did not know what to do...

It was very dangerous now.

He might get killed if he stayed here much longer!

As she was thinking...

An angry voice was heard. "You killed my father. I'm going to kill your daughter!"

Janson stood up suddenly and raised his pistol to aim at Tanya! Karl was anxious. He let go of Ruth and shouted at Tanya, "Careful!"

Tanya's eyes widened.

Even Morris looked suddenly turned toward Janson, but it was too late. Janson had already pulled the trigger!

At the moment, just as everyone held their breaths, they realized that Janson had pulled the trigger but there was no sound at all.

Janson's hands were trembling. Only then did everyone realize that the gun was not loaded! Morris was shocked. He stood between Tanya and Janson and shouted angrily, "What are you doing?"

Janson looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, don't worry. I didn't forget I'm a cop!"

He knew what he should and shouldn't do!

Then why did he suddenly target Tanya? At this thought, Morris suddenly realized something. This was a diversion!

This was Janson and Captain Johnson's plan!

Indeed, Morris suddenly turned his head and saw that on the other side, Captain Johnson suddenly shouted at Ruth, "Get down!"

Ruth understood and hurriedly dropped to the ground.

Then, Captain Johnson calmly shot Karl with a cold expression!

Captain Johnson wanted to kill Karl!! Karl looked at the gun aimed at him and knew that he could not escape...

He subconsciously looked at Tanya.

For some reason, he suddenly thought of the dumplings that Jill had once made for him with three-fish filling...

Was he going to die here today?

Although he was unwilling, he seemed to feel a little better when he thought about how he was going to reunite with Jill.

These thoughts flashed across Karl's mind...

But at this point!

Unexpectedly, the falling Ruth suddenly raised her arm. Coincidentally, she blocked the bullet aimed at Karl!

Bam!

The bullet hit Ruth's arm, causing her to cry out in pain. "Ah!!"

The bullet was blocked. It seemed to be mostly luck, but no one had noticed that Nora, who was treating Old Terry on the ground, had suddenly picked up a coffee bean lying on the ground and thrown it at Ruth, hitting her arm. Nora narrowed her eyes. She had been performing CPR on Old Terry with another policeman.

However, she was actually looking around and watching the reactions of the people around

her.

Karl was saved again. He quickly came back to his senses and grabbed Ruth's arm, taking her hostage again! She, who had been trying to escape had been shot in the arm, causing her to turn pale.

At this moment, Ruth was so angry that her entire body was trembling.

She just wanted to receive credit. She did not expect things to end up like this!

Karl did not listen to her and dragged Ruth to the door.

At the door, Black Panther was waiting in a black car. He was originally going to pick Karl up from prison.

He did not expect to get into such a situation.

He immediately rushed to Karl's side and asked, "Brother, what's going on?!" When Captain Johnson saw him, he shouted, "Do you see that? That is Black Panther! He's here to receive Karl. They must have planned everything long ago! They planned to kill Old Terry!"

He was not anxious at all.

Luck was a factor when he picked up the gun earlier.

It would have been best if he could kill Karl. But even if he couldn't, Karl would still be frightened away. As long as he left, everything could be buried!

Karl roared, "I didn't!"

Morris stared at him. "Karl, I believe you. Put down the gun and surrender. I guarantee that no one can hurt you! I'll find evidence for you! But if you leave, your innocence will never be proven!"

Black Panther said warily, "Brother, we can't trust these people. They're too sly! Follow me. We can escape from here! Black Bear and the others are ready!"

Hearing that Black Bear was here, Karl was even more confident to escape.

However...

Was he really leaving?

Karl turned to look at Tanya, who was following behind everyone.

If he left, he might never see Tanya in his life again.

But if he did not leave...

"Brother, you have to go! You don't have any evidence to prove your innocence!" Black Panther was anxious and shouted vigilantly. The two of them hid behind the car and avoided the snipers.

The car was in front of him.

Once he got into the car, he could leave safely.

However, Captain Johnson shouted, “We can’t let him go. We have to make him pay for Old Terry’s death! He killed Old Terry!”

Karl narrowed his eyes and made up his mind.

He reached out and held the car door. When Captain Johnson saw this, he heaved a sigh of relief.

However, at this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded. “Who said Old Terry is dead?”

Nora’s words caused everyone to look at her.

Morris’s eyes darkened and he glanced at Captain Johnson. However, there was no surprise in his eyes. He sighed silently at this old fox and looked at Nora at the same time. He asked, “Old Terry isn’t dead?”

“His heartbeat just returned to normal.”

Nora said, “But his head was blown up at his temple. He’s currently in a coma...”

When Captain Johnson heard this, his deep eyes were filled with contemplation, but he pretended to be excited. “What? Old Terry really isn’t dead? That’s great! He’s in a coma. Can he recover?”

Nora nodded. “Of course. I have a way to save him!”

“Great!”

Captain Johnson was so excited that his eyes were red. “Old Terry is an outstanding police officer. If he died just like that, it’d be all my fault!”

Nora kept staring at Captain Johnson, hearing all his lies with interest. Originally, she had thought that Captain Johnson was a brainless and impulsive person. But at this moment, she suddenly realized that she had misjudged him!

Ever since Captain Johnson had entered the picture, he had been very troublesome. He was easy to anger and his hate for her was obvious. This had made her lower her guard, thinking that Captain Johnson was really such a person.

It was only after this incident that Nora suddenly realized that this Captain Johnson was really a sly old fox!

If he was really just a senile old man, how could Captain Johnson have killed someone and framed Karl? How could he have done everything so naturally? Having worked alongside these five years, Nora trusted Karl more.

Although Karl did not say anything, she had already guessed the reality of the matter.

Captain Johnson fired, and Karl snatched the pistol. There could be a ballistic analysis. However, Captain Johnson's fingerprints were definitely not on the pistol in Karl's hand!

Captain Johnson was careful enough not to leave any evidence.

And...

Old Terry's temple was pierced by a gun. The bullet trajectory was also calculated in advance.

Now, Captain Johnson was so calm, and he was also certain that Old Terry would not survive. What Nora had said earlier was actually a lie...

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes slightly. She did not look at Captain Johnson but at Karl. She said calmly, "Now, all the evidence points to you, but Old Terry is still alive. Whether you leave or stay is your decision."

Karl tightened his jaw.

After repeatedly breaking out of prison, he could already be the number one criminal in the special department. If he stayed, it would be even harder to escape next time.

Furthermore, the situation was not optimistic for him.

When Karl hesitated, Captain Johnson shouted angrily, "Nora, what nonsense are you talking about again?! Make him stay and bear the punishment! Even if Old Terry didn't die, he was the one who injured him!"

Janson clenched his fists. "He's my father's murderer. Even if he leaves, even if I have to chase him to the ends of the earth, I'll catch up to him!"

Karl looked at the people in front of him.

Not long ago, he was also one of them. It was because he looked evil and did not look like a good person that he was chosen by Old Terry to be an undercover agent.

After being undercover for so many years, he really wanted to go home.

However, there was no one at home, and it was meaningless to come back. Therefore, he had established an Assassin Alliance overseas. On the surface, he took money to do things, but was it not just another way to maintain peace?

After leaving this place, he could continue to live a happy life.

But was he really leaving? His gaze fell on Tanya, who was following Nora and stumbling out the door. On his daughter's bright face, her eyes were stuck on him. There was reluctance, hesitation, and confusion in them.

Karl understood her thoughts.

She wanted him to stay, but she was afraid that he would die if he did. She wanted him to live, but she did not know what to do.

Karl suddenly lowered his eyes.

He turned to look at Black Panther and said, "Get in."

Black Panther heaved a sigh of relief and sat in the driver's seat.

The others immediately took a step forward. Morris said in a deep voice, "Karl, don't make the wrong choice! We will give you justice! You have to believe in us!"

Captain Johnson picked up the walkie-talkie and said to the sniper hiding in the dark, who was searching for the best sniping position, "Find an opportunity and kill him! Take revenge for Old Terry!"

When Nora heard this, she glanced at Captain Johnson.

But she said nothing. Strictly speaking, Captain Johnson wasn't doing anything wrong. For the safety of the hostages, shooting was inevitable.

Just as she was worried that Karl would really leave, she saw him grab Ruth and say to Black Panther in the car, "Go!"

Black Panther was stunned and shouted, "Brother!"

Karl did not speak. His eyes were very firm. "Go!"

Black Panther bit his lips in anger. However, when he saw the people slowly surrounding him, he knew that if he did not leave now, he would probably be trapped if the sniper found his position.

If his brother would not leave, then he had to leave first to find a chance to save him.

Thinking of this, Black Panther became ruthless. He stepped on the accelerator and rushed out!

Other police officers chased after him, but unfortunately, they could never catch a top killer like Black Panther.

Karl pushed Ruth and slowly raised his hand.

Captain Johnson instantly picked up his gun and was about to shoot Karl when Morris suddenly held his hand and said in a deep voice, "Captain Johnson, he has already surrendered. It's probably inappropriate for you to kill him, right?"

Captain Johnson took a deep breath and shouted angrily, "He killed Old Terry!"

Janson, who was beside him, rushed forward.

Ruth thought that Janson was here to pick her up and reached out. However, the next moment, Janson circled around Ruth and rushed to Karl, waving his fists at him!

With a bang, Janson hit him in the face.

Karl did not dodge. He stood there and stared at Janson. "You're Old Terry's son, so I'll take this punch!"

Just as Janson was about to hit him again, someone rushed forward and stopped him. "Alright, alright. That's enough. We have to follow the law!"

“Yes, we can’t beat others up in private... Let’s go see your father quickly!”

Janson was taken away by the other colleagues. A group of people immediately rushed forward and detained Karl. They twisted his arms behind his back and restrained him.

At this moment, Karl’s face was swollen and he did not look good.

However, he still looked up and gave Tanya a reassuring look.

Tanya’s eyes instantly turned red. She held Nora’s hand. “He’s innocent!”

Nora patted her hand. “You should go back for now. I’ll handle the matters here.”

Tanya knew that it was useless for her to stay. Instead, Janson and the others could use her to deal with Karl. Therefore, she nodded and left.

Only then did Nora enter the department. She did not look at the things in the hall and turned to the interrogation room.

Someone had already called 911. The medic rushed in and was looking at Old Terry’s eyes in the interrogation room. The medic frowned. “Well, it’s useless even if we pick him up.” “Yes, his temple was pierced. He’s probably already brain dead. There’s no way to save him.”

The forensic doctor in the special department also sighed. “I don’t think it’s necessary, either.”

Faced with their words, Nora lowered her eyes and said, “You don’t have to care about him. You just have to take him to the hospital. My medical team will take over the treatment for Old Terry.”

The medic was stunned and looked at her in confusion. “You are?”

“I’m Anti.”

Nora showed her identification card. The few medics instantly nodded. “Okay.”

They lifted the stretcher and placed Old Terry on it. As soon as they went out, they were stopped by someone in the hall.

At this moment, a group of people from the special department was gathered in the hall. At a glance, there should be more than a hundred people.

At this moment, everyone was in a frenzy. Some were comforting Janson, while others stood behind Captain Johnson, opposite Morris.

Janson clenched his fists tightly, his body was slightly trembling. "Captain Ford, my father is here while Karl is lying in the interrogation room. Are you still protecting him? Why can't you give the judgment now?!"

Captain Johnson also said, "Morris, why on earth are you protecting him? He's a criminal! A murderer! Are you going to protect him just because he's close to Nora? Now, all the evidence is here. With all the evidence, why don't you convict him immediately?!"

Logically speaking, convictions were a matter of the court.

However, this department was relatively special. Because of the complexity of the cases they investigated, the special department was independent of all departments.

Therefore, the special department was completely qualified to judge Karl.

Janson pointed at Karl and shouted angrily, "Captain Ford, my father has been a police officer his entire life and has never done anything to let the people down! He has more than twenty wounds on his body, all of which are scars from being injured during missions. Now, They act up and hurt every time the weather gets rainy! But even so, he has never troubled the country... Why should a person like him accept such an outcome?! I want Karl Moore to be sentenced to death! He deliberately killed someone! I want to execute him with my own hands!"

Janson was agitated.

Even if Nora said that she could treat Old Terry, he did not have much hope. His temple was pierced, so how could he still live? Captain Johnson sighed at the side. "Janson, don't be agitated. Morris will definitely give everyone an explanation."

Janson wiped his tears and looked at Morris fiercely.

Morris pursed his lips and said slowly, “We still need to investigate this matter...”

“What else is there to investigate?!” Captain Johnson couldn’t stand it anymore. He glared at Morris angrily. “Or do you believe this murderer and want to investigate me?! I’ve been comrades with Old Terry for more than twenty years. We’re brothers. Don’t you believe me?!”

As soon as he said this, Janson suddenly raised his head and glared at Morris. “Captain Ford, my father and Captain Johnson are good brothers. I trust Captain Johnson. Besides, the evidence is conclusive. What else is there to investigate? Are you planning to subside his trial because he has let go of the hostage and turned himself in? I don’t agree! I’ll never forgive a murderer!”

With that, he looked around. “Brothers, help me! I only want to get justice for my father!”

Everyone in the special department was brave. Many of their comrades had died during missions.

Regarding Janson’s encounter, they were very concerned. From their point of view, Captain Johnson and Old Terry were brothers. Furthermore, with the evidence available, how could they still suspect Captain Johnson?!

Therefore, everyone said:

“Captain Ford, you have to give an explanation for this!”

“Yes, he killed a hero. Old Terry is an existence we all respect!”

“Captain Ford, you can’t shield the murderer!”

At this moment, the people from the special department stood behind Janson and Captain Johnson.

Johnson narrowed his eyes. Previously, he had used many methods but the people from the special department did not stand on his side. But now, with Old Terry’s death, so many people had leaned over to his side.

Perhaps this was because humans innately sympathized with the weak.

Morris stared at those people, his eyes persistent and cold. However, he stood in front of Karl, opposite his colleague.

He slowly said, "It's not that I'm protecting the murderer, but this case can't be closed yet. We can't let any suspects off, but we can't malign any innocent people either!"

Janson's eyes were red as he stared at him. After a moment, he sneered. "Okay, okay! I understand!"

He wiped his tears.

Captain Johnson seemed to be furious as well. "Morris, what the hell do you mean? If you suspect me, just arrest me! What are we after in this industry? The murderer is right behind you. You don't care about him and want to aim the gun at your comrade?!"

Captain Johnson was clearly stirring up everyone's emotions.

Everyone looked at Morris.

Morris took a deep breath.

Captain Johnson had orchestrated the situation very carefully. He did not leave any evidence behind. The only way to overturn the case was with Old Terry.

Morris said, "When Old Terry wakes up, we'll ask him before convicting Karl!"

Captain Johnson sneered. "With just one sentence from Nora, are you sure that Old Terry can wake up? Morris, his temples have exploded. How would he ever come back to life? If Old Terry doesn't wake up, you won't judge Karl? If he stays in a vegetative state his entire life, will Karl wait for him forever?!"

Morris was speechless.

Nora walked out hearing all the commotion. She narrowed her eyes and suddenly said, "Don't wait forever. Give me three days. I'll wake Old Terry up!"

The moment Nora spoke, Janson and the others' gazes fell on her. It reduced the pressure on Morris.

Janson's gaze landed on Old Terry lying on the stretcher.

Earlier, he had seen his father's body. His father's heart had stopped beating. Blood and brain matter had oozed out from his temples. It was a tragic sight.

His colleagues had pulled him away.

At this moment, he turned around and saw that Old Terry's chest was heaving weakly on the stretcher. It was obvious that he was nearly dead.

Janson's eyes turned even redder. He asked with a trembling voice, "Can you really treat him?"

Nora nodded.

However, Ruth, who had finished treating her wounds, held her arm and said, "Miss Smith, what the doctors said earlier clearly indicated that he can't be saved. It's not good for Old Terry if you forcefully keep him alive! His brain is already dead, so why are you torturing his body like this? Just to avoid punishment for Karl?"

When Ruth said this, Janson instantly became furious. "Nora, what on earth is going on? Can't my father's illness be treated? Is there really no such precedent in the world?"

Nora lowered her eyes and glanced at Ruth coldly. Then, she looked at Janson and lowered her head. "Indeed, there are no cases of brain dead patients waking up yet."

These words made Janson's eyes instantly become even more furious. He was like a lion, as if he wanted to rush over and bite her the next moment.

Nora was not afraid at all. She stared at him and said, "But I have a method that might allow your father to obtain a new life. I wonder if you want to use it?"

Janson was stunned. "What way?"

Nora sighed silently. "What is our special department investigating?"

Janson frowned and quickly came back to his senses. "Genetic medicine?"

Nora nodded.

Then, under everyone's gaze, she said slowly, "Everyone has seen the power of gene serum. It can change the DNA and make the body stronger. As our forensic doctor, I have been researching this gene serum for a while now. I've cracked this gene serum!"

With this sentence, everyone looked at her.

Even Morris looked at her in disbelief.

Ruth's eyes widened. "How... how is this possible?"

Nora said calmly, "How is it not?"

Ruth bit her lip and did not speak. Instead, it was Captain Johnson who sneered. "Nora, I think you're really putting the cart before the horse! The case we want to investigate is the human body experiment corresponding to the gene serum! This gene serum itself is an illegal substance. You actually want to use this thing?"

Nora raised her eyebrows. "In order to save people, even if it's poison, we have to use it, right?"

Captain Johnson snorted. "But what's the difference between this and a human trial?!"

The difference...

Of course there was a difference.

Nora lowered her eyes. "Old Terry is already dead anyway. What if the gene serum really revived him?"

She pointed at Old Terry's head and said, "The gene serum has the ability to revive cells, so it can extend bones and bring people back to life. In theory, as long as a person is still breathing, this serum should work!"

Captain Johnson still wanted to say something, but Nora looked straight at Janson. "I'm telling you now, this is the only way. There might be a 50% chance of making your father wake up. So are you going to use it or not?"

Janson said without hesitation, "Yes!"

He did not even need to think about it.

Captain Johnson hurriedly said, "Janson, you..."

Before he could finish, he was stopped by Nora. “Captain Johnson, what are you thinking by stopping me from using the gene serum? Are you that afraid that Old Terry will wake up?”

Captain Johnson choked on her words and shouted angrily, “Of course not. If Old Terry can wake up, I’ll be happier than anyone else! But you’re using his body as an experiment. This is really unacceptable! Besides, what if this gene serum has side effects?! Old Terry is already brain dead. Are you going to insult his corpse and beliefs?”

Janson hesitated.

However, Nora seemed to have expected this. She still said casually, “Therefore, I won’t choose Old Terry as my test subject. I’ll use it on someone else first.”

Janson subconsciously asked, “Who?”

“My cousin, Quentin.”

Nora said slowly, word for word, “You all know that my third brother has all his bones broken. With the current medical knowledge, it’s impossible for him to stand up again. The gene serum can definitely treat people who have broken their bones. I’ll inject the gene serum into Quentin today. After observation, if his health improves, I’ll give it to Old Terry. Is that okay?”

Of course!

If she was confident enough to use it on her own brother, why couldn’t it be used on Old Terry?

Janson hurriedly nodded and decided. “Yes!”

Nora looked at Morris again and raised her eyebrows to ask, “Captain Ford, can I?”

She was asking if she could use the gene serum.

Morris looked at Captain Johnson.

Actually, it was illegal for them to use this drug

now.

But to save Old Terry... Morris said in a deep voice, "Yes."

The matter was settled.

Seeing that he could no longer interrupt, a dark light flashed across Captain Johnson's eyes.

The people gathered in the hall quickly dispersed. Captain Johnson entered the office with Ruth following behind him. "Captain Johnson, do you need me to help you interrogate Karl and make him confess?" "No, it's fine."

Captain Johnson said, "Our best option is to stay put for now!"

He had the absolute advantage. How could he lose?

Besides...

Old Terry's temple had exploded, and his brain matter had come oozing out. He was already dead. Captain Johnson did not believe that Nora could treat Old Terry. Also, what gene serum... Heh, how could it be so effective?

He was waiting to hear the news of Old Terry's death and then send Karl to the guillotine. Then, he would make use of this matter to pull Morris down from his seat!

It was really killing three birds with one stone!

However, Ruth reminded her worriedly, "I heard that Nora took Old Terry to the hospital where her medical team is. And she will treat Quentin tonight."

Captain Johnson sneered. "Okay. Then we'll wait for her treatment results tomorrow!"

In the hospital.

Quentin lay there with a straight face.

Lily stood beside him and was looking at his vitals on the monitors. Quentin was now completely out of danger. His physical indicators had returned to normal. Other than the shattered bones that had not healed, there was no danger.

He lay there weakly, looking at the ceiling.

Then, the door was pushed open.

Nora brought Janson and another member of the special department in.

Quentin glanced at her and said in surprise, "Sister, you changed men again?"
You even changed to two men at once?

Nora: "?"

She frowned and did not react to his words. Beside her, Lily coughed. Quentin instantly stopped talking

Quentin was like a stupid teenager.

Nora ignored his words and said, "I found a way to treat you."

Quentin's eyes instantly lit up as he looked at her. "I knew you could do it!
Treat me quickly. I'm bored to death, and I'm still being bullied every day!"

With that, he glared at Lily.

Nora followed his gaze and looked at Lily in confusion. She saw Lily looking to the side. Lily did not even dare to look her in the eye.

Nora: "..."

She did not speak and just looked at Lily silently. After a while, Lily could not help but say, "Alright, alright. I admit it. Boss, I just pinched his face!"

"Did you just pinch my face?"

Quentin shouted angrily. Lily: "...Oh, I touched his chest."

Nora and Quentin continued to watch her whine.

Lily: "...I touched his thigh."

Nora still did not speak.

Lily was anxious. "That's all! Oh, right, and his Adam's apple."

Quentin looked like he had been humiliated.

Lily was shocked. “Why are you complaining to my boss like this? What if she fires me or lowers my salary? Don’t say anything else. I’ll be responsible!”
“Okay.”

Quentin’s expression was natural. After saying this, he looked at Nora. “What is the treatment method? What are these two men here for?”

Nora was silent for a moment before explaining, “I’m using the gene serum I extracted to treat you now. Because we don’t know how effective it is or if there are any side effects, these two are here to record your reactions.”

Upon hearing this, Quentin immediately pursed his lips. “Heh, as a peerless expert, I won’t make a sound even if you scrape my bones to treat my wounds. Come on!”

Then, he acted as if he was going to the execution ground.

Nora raised her eyebrows.

She had said that on purpose.

Quentin loved to show off. She had deliberately told him that these two people were here to observe him. Quentin would definitely be very cooperative and not make a sound.

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, “Let’s start.”

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. "Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?"

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin's appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, "Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father's sake, I want her to try."

"...Okay, I respect your choice."

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry's illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson's original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum

produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. "Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith's gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!"

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: "Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!"

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: "Is the news reliable?"

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: "I guarantee it's true! They're doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!"

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, "Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!"

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, "You talk too much. I'm the one handling Mr. Hunt's romantic matters. Do you have any experience?"

Sean: "No, what do you think we should do?"

Lawrence smiled. "We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!"

Sean: "...How is this different from what I said earlier?"

Lawrence said, "Of course there's a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in

danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss...”

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, “Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time.”

Austin sneered and replied, “Stop me if you can.”

Ian narrowed her eyes. “I know you’re very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!”

Austin’s tone was still light. “I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you’re not qualified to scare me, my dear!”

Ian was extremely angry. “Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?”

Austin smiled. “I’m really am not.”

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, “Aren’t you afraid of the Hunts?”

Austin still smiled gently. “Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?”

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin’s tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin’s phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, “Smith, if that’s all, I’m hanging up. See you in New York-“

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other

party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

“Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I’ve seen. It’s simply too awesome. I didn’t expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?”

“I’m listening.” Captain Johnson came back to his senses. “I’ll come to the hospital immediately.” “Okay.”

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I’ll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman's exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 535 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Morris's eyes darkened and he glanced at Captain Johnson. However, there was no surprise in his eyes. He sighed silently at this old fox and looked at Nora at the same time. He asked, "Old Terry isn't dead?"

"His heartbeat just returned to normal."

Nora said, "But his head was blown up at his temple. He's currently in a coma..."

When Captain Johnson heard this, his deep eyes were filled with contemplation, but he pretended to be excited. "What? Old Terry really isn't dead? That's great! He's in a coma. Can he recover?"

Nora nodded. "Of course. I have a way to save him!"

"Great!"

Captain Johnson was so excited that his eyes were red. "Old Terry is an outstanding police officer. If he died just like that, it'd be all my fault!"

Nora kept staring at Captain Johnson, hearing all his lies with interest. Originally, she had thought that Captain Johnson was a brainless and impulsive person. But at this moment, she suddenly realized that she had misjudged him!

Ever since Captain Johnson had entered the picture, he had been very troublesome. He was easy to anger and his hate for her was obvious. This had made her lower her guard, thinking that Captain Johnson was really such a person.

It was only after this incident that Nora suddenly realized that this Captain Johnson was really a sly old fox!

If he was really just a senile old man, how could Captain Johnson have killed someone and framed Karl? How could he have done everything so naturally? Having worked alongside these five years, Nora trusted Karl more.

Although Karl did not say anything, she had already guessed the reality of the matter.

Captain Johnson fired, and Karl snatched the pistol. There could be a ballistic analysis. However, Captain Johnson's fingerprints were definitely not on the pistol in Karl's hand!

Captain Johnson was careful enough not to leave any evidence.

And...

Old Terry's temple was pierced by a gun. The bullet trajectory was also calculated in advance.

Now, Captain Johnson was so calm, and he was also certain that Old Terry would not survive. What Nora had said earlier was actually a lie...

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes slightly. She did not look at Captain Johnson but at Karl. She said calmly, "Now, all the evidence points to you, but Old Terry is still alive. Whether you leave or stay is your decision."

Karl tightened his jaw.

After repeatedly breaking out of prison, he could already be the number one criminal in the special department. If he stayed, it would be even harder to escape next time.

Furthermore, the situation was not optimistic for him.

When Karl hesitated, Captain Johnson shouted angrily, "Nora, what nonsense are you talking about again?! Make him stay and bear the punishment! Even if Old Terry didn't die, he was the one who injured him!"

Janson clenched his fists. "He's my father's murderer. Even if he leaves, even if I have to chase him to the ends of the earth, I'll catch up to him!"

Karl looked at the people in front of him.

Not long ago, he was also one of them. It was because he looked evil and did not look like a good person that he was chosen by Old Terry to be an undercover agent.

After being undercover for so many years, he really wanted to go home.

However, there was no one at home, and it was meaningless to come back. Therefore, he had established an Assassin Alliance overseas. On the surface, he took money to do things, but was it not just another way to maintain peace?

After leaving this place, he could continue to live a happy life.

But was he really leaving? His gaze fell on Tanya, who was following Nora and stumbling out the door. On his daughter's bright face, her eyes were stuck on him. There was reluctance, hesitation, and confusion in them.

Karl understood her thoughts.

She wanted him to stay, but she was afraid that he would die if he did. She wanted him to live, but she did not know what to do.

Karl suddenly lowered his eyes.

He turned to look at Black Panther and said, "Get in."

Black Panther heaved a sigh of relief and sat in the driver's seat.

The others immediately took a step forward. Morris said in a deep voice, "Karl, don't make the wrong choice! We will give you justice! You have to believe in us!"

Captain Johnson picked up the walkie-talkie and said to the sniper hiding in the dark, who was searching for the best sniping position, "Find an opportunity and kill him! Take revenge for Old Terry!"

When Nora heard this, she glanced at Captain Johnson.

But she said nothing. Strictly speaking, Captain Johnson wasn't doing anything wrong. For the safety of the hostages, shooting was inevitable.

Just as she was worried that Karl would really leave, she saw him grab Ruth and say to Black Panther in the car, "Go!"

Black Panther was stunned and shouted, "Brother!"

Karl did not speak. His eyes were very firm. "Go!"

Black Panther bit his lips in anger. However, when he saw the people slowly surrounding him, he knew that if he did not leave now, he would probably be trapped if the sniper found his position.

If his brother would not leave, then he had to leave first to find a chance to save him.

Thinking of this, Black Panther became ruthless. He stepped on the accelerator and rushed out!

Other police officers chased after him, but unfortunately, they could never catch a top killer like Black Panther.

Karl pushed Ruth and slowly raised his hand.

Captain Johnson instantly picked up his gun and was about to shoot Karl when Morris suddenly held his hand and said in a deep voice, "Captain Johnson, he has already surrendered. It's probably inappropriate for you to kill him, right?".

Captain Johnson took a deep breath and shouted angrily, "He killed Old Terry!"

Janson, who was beside him, rushed forward.

Ruth thought that Janson was here to pick her up and reached out. However, the next moment, Janson circled around Ruth and rushed to Karl, waving his fists at him!

With a bang, Janson hit him in the face.

Karl did not dodge. He stood there and stared at Janson. "You're Old Terry's son, so I'll take this punch!"

Just as Janson was about to hit him again, someone rushed forward and stopped him. "Alright, alright. That's enough. We have to follow the law!"

"Yes, we can't beat others up in private... Let's go see your father quickly!"

Janson was taken away by the other colleagues. A group of people immediately rushed forward and detained Karl. They twisted his arms behind his back and restrained him.

At this moment, Karl's face was swollen and he did not look good.

However, he still looked up and gave Tanya a reassuring look.

Tanya's eyes instantly turned red. She held Nora's hand. "He's innocent!"

Nora patted her hand. "You should go back for now. I'll handle the matters here."

Tanya knew that it was useless for her to stay. Instead, Janson and the others could use her to deal with Karl. Therefore, she nodded and left.

Only then did Nora enter the department. She did not look at the things in the hall and turned to the interrogation room.

Someone had already called 911. The medic rushed in and was looking at Old Terry's eyes in the interrogation room. The medic frowned. "Well, it's useless even if we pick him up." "Yes, his temple was pierced. He's probably already brain dead. There's no way to save him."

The forensic doctor in the special department also sighed. "I don't think it's necessary, either."

Faced with their words, Nora lowered her eyes and said, "You don't have to care about him. You just have to take him to the hospital. My medical team will take over the treatment for Old Terry."

The medic was stunned and looked at her in confusion. "You are?"

"I'm Anti."

Nora showed her identification card. The few medics instantly nodded. "Okay."

They lifted the stretcher and placed Old Terry on it. As soon as they went out, they were stopped by someone in the hall.

At this moment, a group of people from the special department was gathered in the hall. At a glance, there should be more than a hundred people.

At this moment, everyone was in a frenzy. Some were comforting Janson, while others stood behind Captain Johnson, opposite Morris.

Janson clenched his fists tightly, his body was slightly trembling. "Captain Ford, my father is here while Karl is lying in the interrogation room. Are you still protecting him? Why can't you give the judgment now?!"

Captain Johnson also said, "Morris, why on earth are you protecting him? He's a criminal! A murderer! Are you going to protect him just because he's close to Nora? Now, all the evidence is here. With all the evidence, why don't you convict him immediately?!"

Logically speaking, convictions were a matter of the court.

However, this department was relatively special. Because of the complexity of the cases they investigated, the special department was independent of all departments.

Therefore, the special department was completely qualified to judge Karl.

Janson pointed at Karl and shouted angrily, "Captain Ford, my father has been a police officer his entire life and has never done anything to let the people down! He has more than twenty wounds on his body, all of which are scars from being injured during missions. Now, they act up and hurt every time the weather gets rainy! But even so, he has never troubled the country... Why should a person like him accept such an outcome?! I want Karl Moore to be sentenced to death! He deliberately killed someone! I want to execute him with my own hands!"

Janson was agitated.

Even if Nora said that she could treat Old Terry, he did not have much hope. His temple was pierced, so how could he still live? Captain Johnson sighed at the side. "Janson, don't be agitated. Morris will definitely give everyone an explanation."

Janson wiped his tears and looked at Morris fiercely.

Morris pursed his lips and said slowly, "We still need to investigate this matter..."

"What else is there to investigate?!" Captain Johnson couldn't stand it anymore. He glared at Morris angrily. "Or do you believe this murderer and want to investigate me?! I've been comrades with Old Terry for more than twenty years. We're brothers. Don't you believe me?!"

As soon as he said this, Janson suddenly raised his head and glared at Morris. "Captain Ford, my father and Captain Johnson are good brothers. I trust Captain Johnson. Besides, the evidence is conclusive. What else is there to investigate? Are you planning to subside his trial because he has let go of the hostage and turned himself in? I don't agree! I'll never forgive a murderer!"

With that, he looked around. "Brothers, help me! I only want to get justice for my father!"

Everyone in the special department was brave. Many of their comrades had died during missions.

Regarding Janson's encounter, they were very concerned. From their point of view, Captain Johnson and Old Terry were brothers. Furthermore, with the evidence available, how could they still suspect Captain Johnson?!

Therefore, everyone said:

"Captain Ford, you have to give an explanation for this!"

"Yes, he killed a hero. Old Terry is an existence we all respect!"

"Captain Ford, you can't shield the murderer!"

At this moment, the people from the special department stood behind Janson and Captain Johnson.

Johnson narrowed his eyes. Previously, he had used many methods but the people from the special department did not stand on his side. But now, with Old Terry's death, so many people had leaned over to his side.

Perhaps this was because humans innately sympathized with the weak.

Morris stared at those people, his eyes persistent and cold. However, he stood in front of Karl, opposite his colleague.

He slowly said, "It's not that I'm protecting the murderer, but this case can't be closed yet. We can't let any suspects off, but we can't malign any innocent people either!"

Janson's eyes were red as he stared at him. After a moment, he sneered. "Okay, okay! I understand!"

He wiped his tears.

Captain Johnson seemed to be furious as well. "Morris, what the hell do you mean? If you suspect me, just arrest me! What are we after in this industry? The murderer is right behind you. You don't care about him and want to aim the gun at your comrade?!"

Captain Johnson was clearly stirring up everyone's emotions.

Everyone looked at Morris.

Morris took a deep breath.

Captain Johnson had orchestrated the situation very carefully. He did not leave any evidence behind. The only way to overturn the case was with Old Terry.

Morris said, "When Old Terry wakes up, we'll ask him before convicting Karl!"

Captain Johnson sneered. "With just one sentence from Nora, are you sure that Old Terry can wake up? Morris, his temples have exploded. How would he ever come back to life? If Old Terry doesn't wake up, you won't judge Karl? If he stays in a vegetative state his entire life, will Karl wait for him forever?!"

Morris was speechless.

Nora walked out hearing all the commotion. She narrowed her eyes and suddenly said, "Don't wait forever. Give me three days. I'll wake Old Terry up!"

The moment Nora spoke, Janson and the others' gazes fell on her. It reduced the pressure on Morris.

Janson's gaze landed on Old Terry lying on the stretcher.

Earlier, he had seen his father's body. His father's heart had stopped beating. Blood and brain matter had oozed out from his temples. It was a tragic sight.

His colleagues had pulled him away.

At this moment, he turned around and saw that Old Terry's chest was heaving weakly on the stretcher. It was obvious that he was nearly dead.

Janson's eyes turned even redder. He asked with a trembling voice, "Can you really treat him?"

Nora nodded.

However, Ruth, who had finished treating her wounds, held her arm and said, "Miss Smith, what the doctors said earlier clearly indicated that he can't be saved. It's not good for Old Terry if you forcefully keep him alive! His brain is already dead, so why are you torturing his body like this? Just to avoid punishment for Karl?"

When Ruth said this, Janson instantly became furious. “Nora, what on earth is going on? Can’t my father’s illness be treated? Is there really no such precedent in the world?”

Nora lowered her eyes and glanced at Ruth coldly. Then, she looked at Janson and lowered her head. “Indeed, there are no cases of brain dead patients waking up yet.”

These words made Janson’s eyes instantly become even more furious. He was like a lion, as if he wanted to rush over and bite her the next moment.

Nora was not afraid at all. She stared at him and said, “But I have a method that might allow your father to obtain a new life. I wonder if you want to use it?”

Janson was stunned. “What way?”

Nora sighed silently. “What is our special department investigating?”

Janson frowned and quickly came back to his senses. “Genetic medicine?”

Nora nodded.

Then, under everyone’s gaze, she said slowly, “Everyone has seen the power of gene serum. It can change the DNA and make the body stronger. As our forensic doctor, I have been researching this gene serum for a while now. I’ve cracked this gene serum!”

With this sentence, everyone looked at her.

Even Morris looked at her in disbelief.

Ruth’s eyes widened. “How... how is this possible?”

Nora said calmly, “How is it not?”

Ruth bit her lip and did not speak. Instead, it was Captain Johnson who sneered. “Nora, I think you’re really putting the cart before the horse! The case we want to investigate is the human body experiment corresponding to the gene serum! This gene serum itself is an illegal substance. You actually want to use this thing?”

Nora raised her eyebrows. “In order to save people, even if it’s poison, we have to use it, right?”

Captain Johnson snorted. “But what’s the difference between this and a human trial?!”

The difference...

Of course there was a difference.

Nora lowered her eyes. “Old Terry is already dead anyway. What if the gene serum really revived him?”

She pointed at Old Terry’s head and said, “The gene serum has the ability to revive cells, so it can extend bones and bring people back to life. In theory, as long as a person is still breathing, this serum should work!”

Captain Johnson still wanted to say something, but Nora looked straight at Janson. “I’m telling you now, this is the only way. There might be a 50% chance of making your father wake up. So are you going to use it or not?”

Janson said without hesitation, “Yes!”

He did not even need to think about it.

Captain Johnson hurriedly said, “Janson, you...”

Before he could finish, he was stopped by Nora. “Captain Johnson, what are you thinking by stopping me from using the gene serum? Are you that afraid that Old Terry will wake up?”

Captain Johnson choked on her words and shouted angrily, “Of course not. If Old Terry can wake up, I’ll be happier than anyone else! But you’re using his body as an experiment. This is really unacceptable! Besides, what if this gene serum has side effects?! Old Terry is already brain dead. Are you going to insult his corpse and beliefs?”

Janson hesitated.

However, Nora seemed to have expected this. She still said casually, “Therefore, I won’t choose Old Terry as my test subject. I’ll use it on someone else first.”

Janson subconsciously asked, "Who?"

"My cousin, Quentin."

Nora said slowly, word for word, "You all know that my third brother has all his bones broken. With the current medical knowledge, it's impossible for him to stand up again. The gene serum can definitely treat people who have broken their bones. I'll inject the gene serum into Quentin today. After observation, if his health improves, I'll give it to Old Terry. Is that okay?"

Of course!

If she was confident enough to use it on her own brother, why couldn't it be used on Old Terry?

Janson hurriedly nodded and decided. "Yes!"

Nora looked at Morris again and raised her eyebrows to ask, "Captain Ford, can I?"

She was asking if she could use the gene serum.

Morris looked at Captain Johnson.

Actually, it was illegal for them to use this drug

now.

But to save Old Terry... Morris said in a deep voice, "Yes."

The matter was settled.

Seeing that he could no longer interrupt, a dark light flashed across Captain Johnson's eyes.

The people gathered in the hall quickly dispersed. Captain Johnson entered the office with Ruth following behind him. "Captain Johnson, do you need me to help you interrogate Karl and make him confess?" "No, it's fine."

Captain Johnson said, "Our best option is to stay put for now!"

He had the absolute advantage. How could he lose?

Besides...

Old Terry's temple had exploded, and his brain matter had come oozing out. He was already dead. Captain Johnson did not believe that Nora could treat Old Terry. Also, what gene serum... Heh, how could it be so effective?

He was waiting to hear the news of Old Terry's death and then send Karl to the guillotine. Then, he would make use of this matter to pull Morris down from his seat!

It was really killing three birds with one stone!

However, Ruth reminded her worriedly, "I heard that Nora took Old Terry to the hospital where her medical team is. And she will treat Quentin tonight."

Captain Johnson sneered. "Okay. Then we'll wait for her treatment results tomorrow!"

In the hospital.

Quentin lay there with a straight face.

Lily stood beside him and was looking at his vitals on the monitors. Quentin was now completely out of danger. His physical indicators had returned to normal. Other than the shattered bones that had not healed, there was no danger.

He lay there weakly, looking at the ceiling.

Then, the door was pushed open.

Nora brought Janson and another member of the special department in.

Quentin glanced at her and said in surprise, "Sister, you changed men again?" You even changed to two men at once?

Nora: "?"

She frowned and did not react to his words. Beside her, Lily coughed. Quentin instantly stopped talking

Quentin was like a stupid teenager.

Nora ignored his words and said, "I found a way to treat you."

Quentin's eyes instantly lit up as he looked at her. "I knew you could do it! Treat me quickly. I'm bored to death, and I'm still being bullied every day!"

With that, he glared at Lily.

Nora followed his gaze and looked at Lily in confusion. She saw Lily looking to the side. Lily did not even dare to look her in the eye.

Nora: "..."

She did not speak and just looked at Lily silently. After a while, Lily could not help but say, "Alright, alright. I admit it. Boss, I just pinched his face!"

"Did you just pinch my face?"

Quentin shouted angrily. Lily: "...Oh, I touched his chest."

Nora and Quentin continued to watch her whine.

Lily: "...I touched his thigh."

Nora still did not speak.

Lily was anxious. "That's all! Oh, right, and his Adam's apple."

Quentin looked like he had been humiliated.

Lily was shocked. "Why are you complaining to my boss like this? What if she fires me or lowers my salary? Don't say anything else. I'll be responsible!"
"Okay."

Quentin's expression was natural. After saying this, he looked at Nora. "What is the treatment method? What are these two men here for?"

Nora was silent for a moment before explaining, "I'm using the gene serum I extracted to treat you now. Because we don't know how effective it is or if there are any side effects, these two are here to record your reactions."

Upon hearing this, Quentin immediately pursed his lips. "Heh, as a peerless expert, I won't make a sound even if you scrape my bones to treat my wounds. Come on!"

Then, he acted as if he was going to the execution ground.

Nora raised her eyebrows.

She had said that on purpose.

Quentin loved to show off. She had deliberately told him that these two people were here to observe him. Quentin would definitely be very cooperative and not make a sound.

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, "Let's start."

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. "Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?"

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin's appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, "Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father's sake, I want her to try."

"...Okay, I respect your choice."

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry's illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson's original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. "Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith's gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!"

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: "Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!"

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: "Is the news reliable?"

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: "I guarantee it's true! They're doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!"

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, "Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!"

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, "You talk too much. I'm the one handling Mr. Hunt's romantic matters. Do you have any experience?"

Sean: "No, what do you think we should do?"

Lawrence smiled. "We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!"

Sean: "...How is this different from what I said earlier?"

Lawrence said, "Of course there's a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss..."

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, "Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time."

Austin sneered and replied, "Stop me if you can."

Ian narrowed her eyes. "I know you're very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!"

Austin's tone was still light. "I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you're not qualified to scare me, my dear!"

Ian was extremely angry. "Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?"

Austin smiled. "I'm really am not."

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, "Aren't you afraid of the Hunts?"

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and

answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

"Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I've seen. It's simply too awesome. I didn't expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?"

"I'm listening." Captain Johnson came back to his senses. "I'll come to the hospital immediately." "Okay."

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I’ll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman’s exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 536 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

"I'm Anti."

Nora showed her identification card. The few medics instantly nodded. "Okay."

They lifted the stretcher and placed Old Terry on it. As soon as they went out, they were stopped by someone in the hall.

At this moment, a group of people from the special department was gathered in the hall. At a glance, there should be more than a hundred people.

At this moment, everyone was in a frenzy. Some were comforting Janson, while others stood behind Captain Johnson, opposite Morris.

Janson clenched his fists tightly, his body was slightly trembling. "Captain Ford, my father is here while Karl is lying in the interrogation room. Are you still protecting him? Why can't you give the judgment now?!"

Captain Johnson also said, "Morris, why on earth are you protecting him? He's a criminal! A murderer! Are you going to protect him just because he's close to Nora? Now, all the evidence is here. With all the evidence, why don't you convict him immediately?!"

Logically speaking, convictions were a matter of the court.

However, this department was relatively special. Because of the complexity of the cases they investigated, the special department was independent of all departments.

Therefore, the special department was completely qualified to judge Karl.

Janson pointed at Karl and shouted angrily, "Captain Ford, my father has been a police officer his entire life and has never done anything to let the people down! He has more than twenty wounds on his body, all of which are scars from being injured during missions. Now, they act up and hurt every time the weather gets rainy! But even so, he has never troubled the country... Why should a person like him accept such an outcome?! I want Karl Moore to be sentenced to death! He deliberately killed someone! I want to execute him with my own hands!"

Janson was agitated.

Even if Nora said that she could treat Old Terry, he did not have much hope. His temple was pierced, so how could he still live? Captain Johnson sighed at the side. "Janson, don't be agitated. Morris will definitely give everyone an explanation."

Janson wiped his tears and looked at Morris fiercely.

Morris pursed his lips and said slowly, "We still need to investigate this matter..."

"What else is there to investigate?!" Captain Johnson couldn't stand it anymore. He glared at Morris angrily. "Or do you believe this murderer and want to investigate me?! I've been comrades with Old Terry for more than twenty years. We're brothers. Don't you believe me?!"

As soon as he said this, Janson suddenly raised his head and glared at Morris. "Captain Ford, my father and Captain Johnson are good brothers. I trust Captain Johnson. Besides, the evidence is conclusive. What else is there

to investigate? Are you planning to subside his trial because he has let go of the hostage and turned himself in? I don't agree! I'll never forgive a murderer!"

With that, he looked around. "Brothers, help me! I only want to get justice for my father!"

Everyone in the special department was brave. Many of their comrades had died during missions.

Regarding Janson's encounter, they were very concerned. From their point of view, Captain Johnson and Old Terry were brothers. Furthermore, with the evidence available, how could they still suspect Captain Johnson?!

Therefore, everyone said:

"Captain Ford, you have to give an explanation for this!"

"Yes, he killed a hero. Old Terry is an existence we all respect!"

"Captain Ford, you can't shield the murderer!"

At this moment, the people from the special department stood behind Janson and Captain Johnson.

Johnson narrowed his eyes. Previously, he had used many methods but the people from the special department did not stand on his side. But now, with Old Terry's death, so many people had leaned over to his side.

Perhaps this was because humans innately sympathized with the weak.

Morris stared at those people, his eyes persistent and cold. However, he stood in front of Karl, opposite his colleague.

He slowly said, "It's not that I'm protecting the murderer, but this case can't be closed yet. We can't let any suspects off, but we can't malign any innocent people either!"

Janson's eyes were red as he stared at him. After a moment, he sneered. "Okay, okay! I understand!"

He wiped his tears.

Captain Johnson seemed to be furious as well. "Morris, what the hell do you mean? If you suspect me, just arrest me! What are we after in this industry? The murderer is right behind you. You don't care about him and want to aim the gun at your comrade?!"

Captain Johnson was clearly stirring up everyone's emotions.

Everyone looked at Morris.

Morris took a deep breath.

Captain Johnson had orchestrated the situation very carefully. He did not leave any evidence behind. The only way to overturn the case was with Old Terry.

Morris said, "When Old Terry wakes up, we'll ask him before convicting Karl!"

Captain Johnson sneered. "With just one sentence from Nora, are you sure that Old Terry can wake up? Morris, his temples have exploded. How would he ever come back to life? If Old Terry doesn't wake up, you won't judge Karl? If he stays in a vegetative state his entire life, will Karl wait for him forever?!"

Morris was speechless.

Nora walked out hearing all the commotion. She narrowed her eyes and suddenly said, "Don't wait forever. Give me three days. I'll wake Old Terry up!"

The moment Nora spoke, Janson and the others' gazes fell on her. It reduced the pressure on Morris.

Janson's gaze landed on Old Terry lying on the stretcher.

Earlier, he had seen his father's body. His father's heart had stopped beating. Blood and brain matter had oozed out from his temples. It was a tragic sight.

His colleagues had pulled him away.

At this moment, he turned around and saw that Old Terry's chest was heaving weakly on the stretcher. It was obvious that he was nearly dead.

Janson's eyes turned even redder. He asked with a trembling voice, "Can you really treat him?"

Nora nodded.

However, Ruth, who had finished treating her wounds, held her arm and said, “Miss Smith, what the doctors said earlier clearly indicated that he can’t be saved. It’s not good for Old Terry if you forcefully keep him alive! His brain is already dead, so why are you torturing his body like this? Just to avoid punishment for Karl?”

When Ruth said this, Janson instantly became furious. “Nora, what on earth is going on? Can’t my father’s illness be treated? Is there really no such precedent in the world?”

Nora lowered her eyes and glanced at Ruth coldly. Then, she looked at Janson and lowered her head. “Indeed, there are no cases of brain dead patients waking up yet.”

These words made Janson’s eyes instantly become even more furious. He was like a lion, as if he wanted to rush over and bite her the next moment.

Nora was not afraid at all. She stared at him and said, “But I have a method that might allow your father to obtain a new life. I wonder if you want to use it?”

Janson was stunned. “What way?”

Nora sighed silently. “What is our special department investigating?”

Janson frowned and quickly came back to his senses. “Genetic medicine?”

Nora nodded.

Then, under everyone’s gaze, she said slowly, “Everyone has seen the power of gene serum. It can change the DNA and make the body stronger. As our forensic doctor, I have been researching this gene serum for a while now. I’ve cracked this gene serum!”

With this sentence, everyone looked at her.

Even Morris looked at her in disbelief.

Ruth’s eyes widened. “How... how is this possible?”

Nora said calmly, “How is it not?”

Ruth bit her lip and did not speak. Instead, it was Captain Johnson who sneered. “Nora, I think you’re really putting the cart before the horse! The case we want to investigate is the human body experiment corresponding to the gene serum! This gene serum itself is an illegal substance. You actually want to use this thing?”

Nora raised her eyebrows. “In order to save people, even if it’s poison, we have to use it, right?”

Captain Johnson snorted. “But what’s the difference between this and a human trial?!”

The difference...

Of course there was a difference.

Nora lowered her eyes. “Old Terry is already dead anyway. What if the gene serum really revived him?”

She pointed at Old Terry’s head and said, “The gene serum has the ability to revive cells, so it can extend bones and bring people back to life. In theory, as long as a person is still breathing, this serum should work!”

Captain Johnson still wanted to say something, but Nora looked straight at Janson. “I’m telling you now, this is the only way. There might be a 50% chance of making your father wake up. So are you going to use it or not?”

Janson said without hesitation, “Yes!”

He did not even need to think about it.

Captain Johnson hurriedly said, “Janson, you...”

Before he could finish, he was stopped by Nora. “Captain Johnson, what are you thinking by stopping me from using the gene serum? Are you that afraid that Old Terry will wake up?”

Captain Johnson choked on her words and shouted angrily, “Of course not. If Old Terry can wake up, I’ll be happier than anyone else! But you’re using his body as an experiment. This is really unacceptable! Besides, what if this gene serum has side effects?! Old Terry is already brain dead. Are you going to insult his corpse and beliefs?”

Janson hesitated.

However, Nora seemed to have expected this. She still said casually, "Therefore, I won't choose Old Terry as my test subject. I'll use it on someone else first."

Janson subconsciously asked, "Who?"

"My cousin, Quentin."

Nora said slowly, word for word, "You all know that my third brother has all his bones broken. With the current medical knowledge, it's impossible for him to stand up again. The gene serum can definitely treat people who have broken their bones. I'll inject the gene serum into Quentin today. After observation, if his health improves, I'll give it to Old Terry. Is that okay?"

Of course!

If she was confident enough to use it on her own brother, why couldn't it be used on Old Terry?

Janson hurriedly nodded and decided. "Yes!"

Nora looked at Morris again and raised her eyebrows to ask, "Captain Ford, can I?"

She was asking if she could use the gene serum.

Morris looked at Captain Johnson.

Actually, it was illegal for them to use this drug

now.

But to save Old Terry... Morris said in a deep voice, "Yes."

The matter was settled.

Seeing that he could no longer interrupt, a dark light flashed across Captain Johnson's eyes.

The people gathered in the hall quickly dispersed. Captain Johnson entered the office with Ruth following behind him. "Captain Johnson, do you need me to help you interrogate Karl and make him confess?" "No, it's fine."

Captain Johnson said, "Our best option is to stay put for now!"

He had the absolute advantage. How could he lose?

Besides...

Old Terry's temple had exploded, and his brain matter had come oozing out. He was already dead. Captain Johnson did not believe that Nora could treat Old Terry. Also, what gene serum... Heh, how could it be so effective?

He was waiting to hear the news of Old Terry's death and then send Karl to the guillotine. Then, he would make use of this matter to pull Morris down from his seat!

It was really killing three birds with one stone!

However, Ruth reminded her worriedly, "I heard that Nora took Old Terry to the hospital where her medical team is. And she will treat Quentin tonight."

Captain Johnson sneered. "Okay. Then we'll wait for her treatment results tomorrow!"

In the hospital.

Quentin lay there with a straight face.

Lily stood beside him and was looking at his vitals on the monitors. Quentin was now completely out of danger. His physical indicators had returned to normal. Other than the shattered bones that had not healed, there was no danger.

He lay there weakly, looking at the ceiling.

Then, the door was pushed open.

Nora brought Janson and another member of the special department in.

Quentin glanced at her and said in surprise, "Sister, you changed men again?" You even changed to two men at once?

Nora: “?”

She frowned and did not react to his words. Beside her, Lily coughed. Quentin instantly stopped talking

Quentin was like a stupid teenager.

Nora ignored his words and said, “I found a way to treat you.”

Quentin’s eyes instantly lit up as he looked at her. “I knew you could do it! Treat me quickly. I’m bored to death, and I’m still being bullied every day!”

With that, he glared at Lily.

Nora followed his gaze and looked at Lily in confusion. She saw Lily looking to the side. Lily did not even dare to look her in the eye.

Nora: “...”

She did not speak and just looked at Lily silently. After a while, Lily could not help but say, “Alright, alright. I admit it. Boss, I just pinched his face!”

“Did you just pinch my face?”

Quentin shouted angrily. Lily: “...Oh, I touched his chest.”

Nora and Quentin continued to watch her whine.

Lily: “...I touched his thigh.”

Nora still did not speak.

Lily was anxious. “That’s all! Oh, right, and his Adam’s apple.”

Quentin looked like he had been humiliated.

Lily was shocked. “Why are you complaining to my boss like this? What if she fires me or lowers my salary? Don’t say anything else. I’ll be responsible!”
“Okay.”

Quentin’s expression was natural. After saying this, he looked at Nora. “What is the treatment method? What are these two men here for?”

Nora was silent for a moment before explaining, "I'm using the gene serum I extracted to treat you now. Because we don't know how effective it is or if there are any side effects, these two are here to record your reactions."

Upon hearing this, Quentin immediately pursed his lips. "Heh, as a peerless expert, I won't make a sound even if you scrape my bones to treat my wounds. Come on!"

Then, he acted as if he was going to the execution ground.

Nora raised her eyebrows.

She had said that on purpose.

Quentin loved to show off. She had deliberately told him that these two people were here to observe him. Quentin would definitely be very cooperative and not make a sound.

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, "Let's start."

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. "Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?"

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin's appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, "Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father's sake, I want her to try."

"...Okay, I respect your choice."

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry's illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson's original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. “Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith’s gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!”

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: “Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!”

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: “Is the news reliable?”

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: “I guarantee it’s true! They’re doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!”

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, "Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!"

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, "You talk too much. I'm the one handling Mr. Hunt's romantic matters. Do you have any experience?"

Sean: "No, what do you think we should do?"

Lawrence smiled. "We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!"

Sean: "...How is this different from what I said earlier?"

Lawrence said, "Of course there's a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss..."

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, "Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time."

Austin sneered and replied, "Stop me if you can."

Ian narrowed her eyes. "I know you're very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!"

Austin's tone was still light. "I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you're not qualified to scare me, my dear!"

Ian was extremely angry. "Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?"

Austin smiled. "I'm really am not."

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, "Aren't you afraid of the Hunts?"

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

“Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I’ve seen. It’s simply too awesome. I didn’t expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?”

“I’m listening.” Captain Johnson came back to his senses. “I’ll come to the hospital immediately.” “Okay.”

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I’ll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman's exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 537 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Of course there was a difference.

Nora lowered her eyes. "Old Terry is already dead anyway. What if the gene serum really revived him?"

She pointed at Old Terry's head and said, "The gene serum has the ability to revive cells, so it can extend bones and bring people back to life. In theory, as long as a person is still breathing, this serum should work!"

Captain Johnson still wanted to say something, but Nora looked straight at Janson. "I'm telling you now, this is the only way. There might be a 50% chance of making your father wake up. So are you going to use it or not?"

Janson said without hesitation, "Yes!"

He did not even need to think about it.

Captain Johnson hurriedly said, "Janson, you..."

Before he could finish, he was stopped by Nora. "Captain Johnson, what are you thinking by stopping me from using the gene serum? Are you that afraid that Old Terry will wake up?"

Captain Johnson choked on her words and shouted angrily, "Of course not. If Old Terry can wake up, I'll be happier than anyone else! But you're using his body as an experiment. This is really unacceptable! Besides, what if this gene serum has side effects?! Old Terry is already brain dead. Are you going to insult his corpse and beliefs?"

Janson hesitated.

However, Nora seemed to have expected this. She still said casually, "Therefore, I won't choose Old Terry as my test subject. I'll use it on someone else first."

Janson subconsciously asked, "Who?"

"My cousin, Quentin."

Nora said slowly, word for word, "You all know that my third brother has all his bones broken. With the current medical knowledge, it's impossible for him to stand up again. The gene serum can definitely treat people who have broken their bones. I'll inject the gene serum into Quentin today. After observation, if his health improves, I'll give it to Old Terry. Is that okay?"

Of course!

If she was confident enough to use it on her own brother, why couldn't it be used on Old Terry?

Janson hurriedly nodded and decided. "Yes!"

Nora looked at Morris again and raised her eyebrows to ask, "Captain Ford, can I?"

She was asking if she could use the gene serum.

Morris looked at Captain Johnson.

Actually, it was illegal for them to use this drug now.

But to save Old Terry... Morris said in a deep voice, "Yes."

The matter was settled.

Seeing that he could no longer interrupt, a dark light flashed across Captain Johnson's eyes.

The people gathered in the hall quickly dispersed. Captain Johnson entered the office with Ruth following behind him. "Captain Johnson, do you need me to help you interrogate Karl and make him confess?" "No, it's fine."

Captain Johnson said, "Our best option is to stay put for now!"

He had the absolute advantage. How could he lose?

Besides...

Old Terry's temple had exploded, and his brain matter had come oozing out. He was already dead. Captain Johnson did not believe that Nora could treat Old Terry. Also, what gene serum... Heh, how could it be so effective?

He was waiting to hear the news of Old Terry's death and then send Karl to the guillotine. Then, he would make use of this matter to pull Morris down from his seat!

It was really killing three birds with one stone!

However, Ruth reminded her worriedly, “I heard that Nora took Old Terry to the hospital where her medical team is. And she will treat Quentin tonight.”

Captain Johnson sneered. “Okay. Then we’ll wait for her treatment results tomorrow!”

In the hospital.

Quentin lay there with a straight face.

Lily stood beside him and was looking at his vitals on the monitors. Quentin was now completely out of danger. His physical indicators had returned to normal. Other than the shattered bones that had not healed, there was no danger.

He lay there weakly, looking at the ceiling.

Then, the door was pushed open.

Nora brought Janson and another member of the special department in.

Quentin glanced at her and said in surprise, “Sister, you changed men again?”
You even changed to two men at once?

Nora: “?”

She frowned and did not react to his words. Beside her, Lily coughed. Quentin instantly stopped talking

Quentin was like a stupid teenager.

Nora ignored his words and said, “I found a way to treat you.”

Quentin’s eyes instantly lit up as he looked at her. “I knew you could do it!
Treat me quickly. I’m bored to death, and I’m still being bullied every day!”

With that, he glared at Lily.

Nora followed his gaze and looked at Lily in confusion. She saw Lily looking to the side. Lily did not even dare to look her in the eye.

Nora: “...”

She did not speak and just looked at Lily silently. After a while, Lily could not help but say, "Alright, alright. I admit it. Boss, I just pinched his face!"

"Did you just pinch my face?"

Quentin shouted angrily. Lily: "...Oh, I touched his chest."

Nora and Quentin continued to watch her whine.

Lily: "...I touched his thigh."

Nora still did not speak.

Lily was anxious. "That's all! Oh, right, and his Adam's apple."

Quentin looked like he had been humiliated.

Lily was shocked. "Why are you complaining to my boss like this? What if she fires me or lowers my salary? Don't say anything else. I'll be responsible!"
"Okay."

Quentin's expression was natural. After saying this, he looked at Nora. "What is the treatment method? What are these two men here for?"

Nora was silent for a moment before explaining, "I'm using the gene serum I extracted to treat you now. Because we don't know how effective it is or if there are any side effects, these two are here to record your reactions."

Upon hearing this, Quentin immediately pursed his lips. "Heh, as a peerless expert, I won't make a sound even if you scrape my bones to treat my wounds. Come on!"

Then, he acted as if he was going to the execution ground.

Nora raised her eyebrows.

She had said that on purpose.

Quentin loved to show off. She had deliberately told him that these two people were here to observe him. Quentin would definitely be very cooperative and not make a sound.

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, "Let's start."

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. "Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?"

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin's appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, "Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father's sake, I want her to try."

"...Okay, I respect your choice."

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry's illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson's original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. "Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith's gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!"

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: "Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!"

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: "Is the news reliable?"

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: "I guarantee it's true! They're doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!"

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. “Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He’s much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!”

However, Sean said, “Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!”

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, “You talk too much. I’m the one handling Mr. Hunt’s romantic matters. Do you have any experience?”

Sean: “No, what do you think we should do?”

Lawrence smiled. “We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!”

Sean: “...How is this different from what I said earlier?”

Lawrence said, “Of course there’s a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss...”

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, “Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time.”

Austin sneered and replied, “Stop me if you can.”

Ian narrowed her eyes. “I know you’re very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!”

Austin's tone was still light. "I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you're not qualified to scare me, my dear!"

Ian was extremely angry. "Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?"

Austin smiled. "I'm really am not."

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, "Aren't you afraid of the Hunts?"

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand

up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

"Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I've seen. It's simply too awesome. I didn't expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?"

"I'm listening." Captain Johnson came back to his senses. "I'll come to the hospital immediately." "Okay."

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

"Screech!"

Captain Johnson's car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora's cold and hoarse voice was heard. "He's here?"

"He just went in."

Justin said calmly, "Go to sleep. I'll keep an eye on him."

"Okay," Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn't even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin's car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman's exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 538 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Treating broken bones was very painful, but she could not use anesthesia. Quentin had to withstand it all on his own.

Nora thought about this and nodded. Then, she said to Lily, "Let's start."

Janson and the forensic doctor from another department stood by the side and observed them.

Janson had to confirm that this medicine was really useful. Otherwise, he would not dare to let Nora use it on his father.

Everyone in the special department knew that although the gene serum sounded good, it was actually a drug used to produce monsters.

Looking at the fate of those who had used this drug, they were all either crazy or dead. No one was unscathed. As he was thinking, he saw Nora take out a medical box. She opened the box with a serious expression and carefully took out a glass jar.

Then, Nora brought over a syringe and took half of the serum from the glass jar.

The glass tube was crystal clear, and the gene serum was transparent and colorless.

Janson swallowed. The forensic doctor from the special department beside him called Mark asked, "Is this the gene serum?"

Nora nodded and said, "I extracted it from their blood and refined it. It can guarantee that this gene serum is good." With that, she looked at Quentin and asked with a grave expression, "I can't guarantee what the final outcome will be if this drug is injected. Brother, I'll ask you one last time. Are you really not afraid?"

Quentin lay there and looked at her with a serious expression. He suddenly asked, "What did you call me?"

Nora lowered her almond-shaped eyes. She looked obedient, but her aura was cold and stern. She called out again, "Brother."

This was the first time Nora had called him brother.

The Big Sister of Quinn School of Martial Arts, an existence respected by everyone, actually called him brother!

Quentin was extremely excited. He nodded and said, "Don't hesitate. Come!"

Nora took a deep breath. Looking at her, she seemed to be very uneasy.

Then, she walked to Quentin and raised the needle to insert into his arm.

A few moments later, Nora suddenly pressed on the broken joint on his arm and asked, "Does it hurt here?"

The moment she pressed it, although Quentin did not say anything, his expression instantly became ferocious.

He should be in a lot of pain. It was so painful that cold sweat broke out on his forehead, and his veins bulged. However, he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

Janson and Mark could not stand it anymore and frowned.

Nora sighed. "Quentin, if it hurts, just shout it out..."

Quentin gritted his teeth. The words almost came out of his throat. "It! Doesn't! Hurt!"

Janson and Mark: "..."

Lily could not stand it any longer. She walked to the two of them and said, "You two, go out. Quentin has too much pride. If you're here, he won't shout even if it hurts. It's not good for him to hold it in."

Janson and Mark nodded and the two of them left the room.

"Ahh!"

Almost as soon as they were out the door, a bloodcurdling scream filled the room, followed by Quentin's cries of pain and murmurs.

Mark could not help but say, "This is too torturous."

Janson nodded.

At this moment, his phone rang. He picked it up and saw Captain Johnson's message. "How's the treatment?"

Janson replied to the voice message, "I can't see anything yet, but the side effects of that drug are really huge. Listen to this, this scream..."

Janson moved the phone away from his ear and aimed it at the ward.

A faint whimper came from inside.

When Captain Johnson heard this, he sighed. "Janson, why do I feel like Nora is too unreliable? Do you really believe she can revive people?"

Janson swallowed. For some reason, he recalled Quentin's appearance from earlier. He suddenly said, "Perhaps? Uncle Johnson, for my father's sake, I want her to try."

"...Okay, I respect your choice."

In the special department, Captain Johnson hung up the phone. He walked back and forth in the office, looking out the door from time to time.

He looked deep in thought.

He had originally refused to believe that the gene serum could create a medical miracle. But why did she suddenly feel a little reliable now...

What if? What if Nora really cured Old Terry's illness? What should he do?!

Captain Johnson's original certainty suddenly turned to uncertainty, making him a little vexed.

He told himself not to be nervous as he walked around the room.

His rationality told him that no one could revive a person from the dead. Old Terry was already brain dead. Even if he had been injected with a gene serum, it was impossible for him to survive.

On the other hand, he had seen too much in the special department and knew how strong those people had become after being injected with the gene serum.

Once, their team had arrested a woman. After she was injected with a gene serum, she became extremely strong. He had seen with his own eyes that the woman had picked up a 150-kilogram object easily and thrown it into the distance...

The more he learned about it, the more he respected that gene serum.

Captain Johnson suddenly took a deep breath and sat in his chair. At the door, Ruth knocked.

Captain Johnson said, "Come in." After Ruth entered and saw him, she asked, "Captain Johnson, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Is there anything I can help you with?"

Ruth's arm was still wrapped in a bandage.

Captain Johnson's gaze swept across the wound before he sighed. "I'm just thinking about Nora's gene serum. Can it really save people?" When Ruth heard this, she narrowed her eyes.

After a while, she said, "Captain Johnson, you might not know, but gene serum is really too popular in the underworld. This serum can improve human genes and make humans perfect. However, the amount of gene serum produced by that mysterious organization is too little. Normal people can't even get in line."

With that, she pretended to hit her mouth. “Look at my mouth. What I mean is, you have to keep Miss Smith’s gene serum a secret. Otherwise, who knows how many people would come fighting over it!”

Her words made Captain Johnson narrow his eyes.

After saying a few more perfunctory words to Ruth, Captain Johnson asked her to leave.

However, after Ruth left, he immediately took out his phone and logged into a foreign forum. There, he posted: “Genetic drugs can be used as life-saving medicine, they can even revive people!”

At the bottom of this thread, it explained in detail that Nora had extracted the gene serum from the prisoner and decided to use it on her already disabled relative.

The drug would also be administered to a severely injured colleague. But it would have to wait three days.

Immediately after the post went online, many anonymous people immediately asked if this was true. One person even asked Johnson personally.

Austin: “Is the news reliable?”

When Captain Johnson saw who it was, he was instantly excited.

Austin was the most powerful underground boss in the UK. He dominated the UK and was not afraid of anyone!

Since he had taken a liking to the gene serum, he would definitely spend a high price to snatch it! With him around, even the Assassin Alliance might not be able to withstand!

Captain Johnson replied: “I guarantee it’s true! They’re doing experiments in the hospital as we speak!”

He was afraid that Old Terry would wake up, but he could not let anything happen at this time. Since he could not do it himself, why not use someone else to kill him?

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, "Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!"

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, "You talk too much. I'm the one handling Mr. Hunt's romantic matters. Do you have any experience?"

Sean: "No, what do you think we should do?"

Lawrence smiled. "We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!"

Sean: "...How is this different from what I said earlier?"

Lawrence said, "Of course there's a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss..."

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, "Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time."

Austin sneered and replied, "Stop me if you can."

Ian narrowed her eyes. "I know you're very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!"

Austin's tone was still light. "I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you're not qualified to scare me, my dear!"

Ian was extremely angry. "Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?"

Austin smiled. "I'm really am not."

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, "Aren't you afraid of the Hunts?"

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

“Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I’ve seen. It’s simply too awesome. I didn’t expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?”

“I’m listening.” Captain Johnson came back to his senses. “I’ll come to the hospital immediately.” “Okay.”

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I’ll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman's exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 539 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

There were countless organizations in the world. He would let those people become enemies with Nora as he sat still and reaped the benefits!

Captain Johnson felt that his plan was absolutely perfect.

Austin replied casually: "I want this gene serum."

He was openly declaring his sovereignty under the post, also warning those small organizations not to try if they did not have the ability!

When Captain Johnson saw this, he instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Since Austin had said so, their organization would definitely send someone.

This time, Nora's matter was over!

However, he did not know that his actions were being monitored by someone who had witnessed the entire conversation.

The black-and-white office was filled with low-key luxury.

Justin sat behind the desk, his dark and long eyes staring at the thread. Then, he slowly lowered his head and his long fingers casually tapped on the sofa.

Lawrence, who was standing beside him, was indignant. "Mr. Hunt, this Austin is not to be trifled with. Although their organization is as famous as the Assassin Alliance, Austin never keeps his word. He's much more terrifying than Karl Moore! Miss Smith is in big trouble now!"

However, Sean said, "Do you want to help? Mr. Hunt, now is the perfect time for you to be a hero and save the beauty!"

Lawrence rolled his eyes at Sean and said nervously, "You talk too much. I'm the one handling Mr. Hunt's romantic matters. Do you have any experience?"

Sean: "No, what do you think we should do?"

Lawrence smiled. "We have to save the damsel in distress, of course!"

Sean: "...How is this different from what I said earlier?"

Lawrence said, "Of course there's a difference! The hero saving the damsel in distress has to wait until Austin comes to New York. When Miss Smith is in danger, the hero will save the damsel in distress in our own territory! This would make Miss Smith rely on Boss..."

Before he could finish speaking, he saw that Justin had already opened a drawer and taken out an encrypted phone to prevent tracking. He called Austin.

At the same time, in the Smiths, Ian was contacting Austin.

The call had just been connected when Ian said, "Austin, Nora is my daughter. You have to give up on the gene serum this time."

Austin sneered and replied, "Stop me if you can."

Ian narrowed her eyes. "I know you're very strong, but this is New York. The Smiths have not been living in retirement all these years!"

Austin's tone was still light. "I know that your family has power and influence in New York. The Smiths can scare others, but you're not qualified to scare me, my dear!"

Ian was extremely angry. "Are you really not afraid of the Smiths?"

Austin smiled. "I'm really am not."

After a moment of silence, Ian said again, "Aren't you afraid of the Hunts?"

Austin still smiled gently. "Are the Hunts any different from the Smiths?"

When Ian heard this, his deep eyes narrowed. He had always suspected that Justin was somehow behind the underworld forces in the UK... That was why he had deliberately mentioned the Hunts in front of Austin. But Austin's tone seemed unaffected even after the mention of the Hunts. Either his guess was wrong, or Austin did not know who the real boss was!

Could it be that Ian was overthinking? Justin actually did not have that much power overseas?

As he was thinking, Austin's phone suddenly received another call on the second line. Austin said, "Smith, if that's all, I'm hanging up. See you in New York-"

With that, he hung up.

Austin pursed his lips.

The two families only lorded over New York, but what were they overseas?

With that in mind, he looked at his phone. The called ID was blank.

Austin narrowed his eyes. His phone was also protected. Logically speaking, unknown numbers should not be able to reach his phone. But now, his phone was ringing. Austin was silent for a moment before picking up his phone and answering the call. A pure British accent came from the other end of the line. "You're too bold, Austin."

That voice...

Austin stood up in shock. He swallowed and asked tentatively, "Mr. King?"

The voice on the other end was low as if it came straight from hell. It made Austin feel like someone had poured a bucket of ice water on his head in the middle of summer. "It's

me."

Austin hurriedly said, "Mr. King, I don't know what I've done to make you call me personally?"

His mind was racing, he was afraid that he would anger him if he was any slower. "Is it that gene serum? Do you want it too?" The other party: "...Scram."

Austin: "Okay, I understand. I'll immediately cancel all the flights to New York... I guarantee I won't appear in New York anytime soon!"

"Beep, beep, beep..."

The call ended.

It was only then that Austin realized that his entire body was drenched in a cold sweat as if he had just been scooped out of water. He looked ahead in surprise and muttered to himself in confusion, "Mr. King is also after the gene serum? If he wanted the gene serum, he only to say the word and the other party would have obediently given it to him, right? Besides, why would Mr. King need such a thing?"

Austin was very puzzled, but he did not dare to ask anything else.

One of his subordinates asked, "Are we still leaving?"

Austin kicked him. "For what? Do you want to die?"

In the country.

After Ian hung up the phone, he thought for a while and finally called Joel. He asked him to send all the people from the Smiths' dark forces to protect Nora at the hospital.

After speaking to Joel, Ian was silent for a while but remained worried.

Austin was too terrifying. He was the worst at keeping his promises. Furthermore, he was ruthless. Ian was afraid that the Smiths would not be able to withstand his attacks.

At this critical moment, Ian put down his prejudice against Justin and called him.

Justin picked up quickly. "Mr. Smith, what's the matter?"

Ian coughed. "You must have seen the post on the foreign forum by now, right? Austin is coming to snatch Nora's medicine. Although I don't know what it is, Austin is a little difficult to deal with. I'm worried about Nora's safety. The Smiths' men are already on their way to the hospital..."

He suddenly could not say anything about asking the Hunts to send someone out.

He was pleading, after all.

However, before he could think of a way to say it, he heard Justin say, "I have 81 bodyguards here. I'll personally guard outside the hospital. Is that okay?"

Hearing this, for the first time, Ian felt that this son-in-law seemed pretty good.

He coughed again. "Yes. I'll be more at ease if you guard it personally."

Justin said politely, "I'm still young, after all. There are some things I couldn't do well, so I still need your guidance. This time, you'll be the commander, and I'll listen to your orders. How about that?"

He was showing weakness.

It also made Ian lower his guard against him for the first time.

In the end, Justin was only a man who had just fallen in love. He shouldn't be that dangerous, right?

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

"Yes!" Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. "You know Quentin's previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson's mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

"Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I've seen. It's simply too awesome. I didn't expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?"

"I'm listening." Captain Johnson came back to his senses. "I'll come to the hospital immediately." "Okay."

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, “Go to sleep. I’ll keep an eye on him.”

“Okay,” Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn’t even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin’s car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman’s exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 540 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Ian said, "Okay, sure. Then listen to the arrangements."

"No problem."

Justin hung up the phone. Lawrence shouted from the side, "Boss, how can you not let Miss Smith know that you're the one actually saving her?"

Sean also looked at Justin.

Justin touched his nose. The mole under his eye flickered, and a sly look appeared in his eyes. "If I'd done something Ian couldn't, do you think he'd still be at ease handing Nora to me?"

Justin had suddenly understood Ian's thoughts.

Thinking about it, if he were to find a husband for Cherry in the future, he definitely would not want her husband to be too powerful. He only hoped that Cherry would be happy and healthy and could find a reliable person to take care of her for the rest of her life.

The more capable a man was, the grander his ambitions. Such a man would be all the more difficult to control.

If Cherry's husband was stronger than him, how could he help Cherry take revenge if he bullied her in the future?

Therefore, the best way was to prevent Cherry's boyfriend from having the ability to overpower him!

Therefore, not only could he not follow Lawrence's instructions and show off his abilities, but he also had to keep a low profile and make Ian put down his guard against him.

Justin stood up and walked out.

Lawrence asked, "Boss, where are you going?" Justin turned around. "The hospital, of course. Didn't I promise Ian that I would guard Nora?"

Lawrence was confused.

Austin did not dare to come!

However, before he could finish speaking, Justin had already strode out the door.

Austin was coming.

This news made Captain Johnson excited and he was constantly paying attention to the movements outside.

The next morning, there was still no news from the hospital.

Captain Johnson comforted himself. It would take 12 hours for Austin to fly from the UK to New York. He must not be here yet! At noon the next day, there was still no news of him at the hospital. Everything was unbelievably stable.

Captain Johnson could only continue to comfort himself. Austin had arrived in New York, and he definitely needed to rest. He could not do anything without the proper preparation.

However, by the morning of the third day, Austin still hadn't shown up!

Captain Johnson could not sit still.

He walked around the room. He, who had not slept the entire night, had serious dark circles under his eyes. He even went online and sent a message to Austin: "You didn't come?"

Austin replied: "Are you looking for death? Scram!"

Johnson: "???"

He looked at Austin's reply on the screen in a daze. Was Austin really not here?

He said he would come, and then posted a comment that frightened others so much that they did not dare to jump in. But in the end, Austin still did not come? Why?!

Captain Johnson abruptly stood up.

He wanted to rush to the hospital, but his last remaining rationality calmed him down. Don't be anxious, don't be anxious...

What if that gene serum was useless? He definitely could not fall into Nora's trap!

At this moment, Janson called. His voice was a little dull. "Captain Johnson!"

He was choking on his tears as he spoke. Captain Johnson heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly said, "Did the experiment fail? Nora's brother didn't stand up, right? Like I said, using the gene serum to treat illnesses is impossible! But Janson, don't be too depressed. Life and death are determined..."

At this point, Janson interrupted him. "No, Captain Johnson, that's not what I meant. I called you to tell you... It worked! Quentin has stood up!"

Captain Johnson's pupils constricted as he looked ahead in a daze. "What did you say? He stood up?"

“Yes!” Janson could not hide the excitement in his voice. “You know Quentin’s previous situation. All his bones were broken, but three days after he was injected with the gene serum, he stood up!”

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He really stood up.

If the gene serum could revive broken bones, then could it also revive damaged brain cells? Therefore, Old Terry had a cure?

Captain Johnson’s mind exploded.

If Old Terry woke up, everything he had done would be exposed.

No—this was all part of their scheme. Quentin could not have stood up.

“Uncle Johnson, this is really a medical miracle that I’ve seen. It’s simply too awesome. I didn’t expect the effect to be so good. Three days... only three days! Quentin stood up. If my father is injected with the drug, can he wake up? Uncle Johnson, Uncle Johnson? Are you listening?”

“I’m listening.” Captain Johnson came back to his senses. “I’ll come to the hospital immediately.” “Okay.”

After hanging up, Captain Johnson got up, put on his jacket, and drove straight to the hospital.

“Screech!”

Captain Johnson’s car stopped outside the door. He got out of the car and ran to the VIP ward. At a distance, Justin sat in the front passenger seat of a car. After watching Captain Johnson enter, he turned around and looked at the back seat.

Nora was lying there to catch up on her sleep. She had a cap covering her face. She was hugging her arms, and her long legs were slightly bent in the cramped seat.

The moment he turned back, Nora’s cold and hoarse voice was heard. “He’s here?”

“He just went in.”

Justin said calmly, "Go to sleep. I'll keep an eye on him."

"Okay," Nora replied lazily. It seemed like she didn't even have the strength to speak.

No one knew that she had not slept at all for the past three days.

To outsiders, Quentin had only taken an injection of gene serum and recovered slowly. However, no one knew how much she had done in private...

Nora was usually not very energetic and only relied on sleeping to replenish her energy. At the time, she had been awake for three consecutive days. She walked out of the hospital with dark circles under her eyes. When she saw Justin's car, she climbed inside without a word and fell down.

Justin did not dare to move, afraid that if he did, he would make a rubbing sound that would disturb her. When he saw the woman's exhausted expression, his heart ached.

Usually, this woman even felt that her dates delayed her sleep, let alone three days of sleepless nights?

He was really worried that Nora would sleep for 72 hours like last time!

However, she seemed to know that she had unfinished business. Therefore, even though she was lying there, she was still paying attention to the outside?

As Justin thought this, he saw Nora suddenly remove her hat and rub her slightly greasy hair. She said in a slightly frustrated tone, "Forget it, I can't sleep."

With that, she opened the car door, put on her cap, and walked to the hospital.

Her legs seemed to have lost strength as she walked, and her dragging footsteps became more and more intense. Furthermore, her face was cold, and her entire body was filled with an aura that stopped others from coming close.

Justin got out of the car and was about to follow when he suddenly heard Cherry's familiar voice. "Mommy ~" Justin subconsciously turned his head and saw Cherry getting out of Sean's car and running over.

Nora also stopped in her tracks.

"Mommy, I miss you so much! I haven't seen you in days. I miss you so much!" Cherry ran over to Nora and reached out with her small little hand. Just as she was about to speak, Nora turned her face and looked at her.

Chapter 541 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

The rest of Cherry's words were stuck in her throat. Her small body trembled forcefully. Then, her hand moved in a different direction, and her words became, "Daddy, hug-"

Justin: "..."

He lowered his head and carried her up. He saw Nora glaring at him and walking forward.

Cherry stayed obediently in Justin's arms until Nora was far away. Then, she leaned into Justin's ear and asked softly, "How long has Mommy been awake?"

"72 hours."

Justin replied.

"Tsk..." Cherry gasped. "It's over. According to my understanding of Mommy, she's at the nuclear stage!"

Justin: "??!"

Cherry struggled to get down.

Justin put her down. Perhaps it was their actions that made Nora turn her head around again.

Cherry immediately said seriously, "Mommy, I suddenly remembered I haven't finished my homework. I'll go back with Uncle Sean now."

Nora's face was expressionless. Her almond-shaped eyes looked at her. After a full three seconds, she finally nodded.

Cherry immediately felt like she had been pardoned. She said to Justin, "Daddy, good luck." Then, she ran over to Sean happily.

Justin: "..."

This little smartass saw Nora's cranky mood and quickly slipped away! Justin shook his head and followed beside Nora. Then, he reached out and hugged her waist.

When his hand touched her, he could clearly feel her body stiffen. A violent aura lingered around her as if a storm was about to descend.

Nora was really going crazy. Other women had strange personalities during their periods and would explode easily at the slightest annoyance, but she did not. She usually did not care about others. It was only when she could not sleep enough that the slightest displeasure could drive her crazy.

At this moment, no one dared to approach her.

When this man's hand was placed on her waist, Nora felt that a wave of evil fire seemed to have found a way to vent out. However, when she turned her head, the man's refreshing aura came over. It actually made her feel like a volcano had touched a stream of icy water. All her frustration was suppressed by the silent and refreshing aura.

Nora pursed her lips and sniffed hard.

The man reached out and took off her cap. He stroked her hair as if he was stroking fur. Nora was like a wild cat about to explode. Her temper was slowly soothed.

Perhaps it was because she had just taken a nap in the car?

Nora suddenly felt like she was not that tired anymore.

She then strode toward the VIP ward.

Outside the ward.

Captain Johnson still did not believe that Quentin could stand up. Janson might have been deceived by Nora. He had to see it with his own eyes.

He and Janson arrived outside Quentin's ward and looked in through the glass window. He saw Quentin holding the table beside him with difficulty and moving his feet bit by bit...

Although every step he took was terribly shaky and fraught with great difficulty, he had indeed managed to stand!

Countless fine beads of perspiration formed on his forehead.

Lily was helping him up at the side. "You have only just recovered, you mustn't overdo it. Go back and lie down after another two steps!"

"Heh, only weak people wouldn't be able to get up and walk around immediately after they recover. Don't forget that I was the third-best fighter in the martial arts scene in New York before I got hurt!"

Quentin was clearly so tired that even his voice had become weak, but the things he said were still as stubborn and competitive as before.

Lily's lip corners spasmed. "Fine, you're the third-best fighter in the world, okay? Even so, you still have to rest more!"

"... I'll walk another round."

Quentin, who refused to listen, continued to move about. Then, he said, "You don't know how tired of lying in bed I've been all this time!"

He looked at Lily, grinned, and said, "Don't be fooled by how trusting I was of Nora before this. To be honest, I wasn't confident of it myself, either. I had also been worried at that time and wondered what I should do if I really can't stand again?"

This was a rare occasion where Lily was actually hearing him confessing his true thoughts, so she didn't diss him.

But unexpectedly, Quentin then said, "If that happened, the martial arts scene would have suffered too great a loss!"

Lily: "???"

Quentin didn't notice Lily's surprise at all. He was still going on by himself. "Now that I've recovered, I have to make full use of the time I have to rehabilitate. There are so many people waiting for me! I also have to continue with my martial arts practice. One day, I will defeat N... I mean, Big Sister!"

He had almost blurted out the fact that Nora was Big Sister again.

Lily: "..."

Lily was filled with a sense of resignation. She walked up to Quentin, sighed heavily, and said, "I've treated so many patients with Anti, but I really haven't met anyone like you my whole life!"

Quentin looked at her. Even though he was as pale as a sheet, and the fine beads on his forehead had condensed into drops of sweat trickling down his cheeks, his eyes nevertheless still lit up. "Someone as handsome and talented as I am?"

"... No, someone as groundlessly confident as you are!"

While the two were bickering, Quentin had completed another round.

Outside the door, Johnson and Janson looked at each other.

Johnson asked in astonishment, "Was he really paralyzed just a few days ago?"

"Yes, he was." Janson whispered, "I held and pressed his joints before the operation. They were all soft and broken... Although they haven't fully healed yet, they are on the way to recovery."

Janson's eyes flushed with excitement. "Dr. Smith has already told me that it really is possible for my father to regain consciousness!"

Johnson took a deep breath.

He suddenly said, "Janson, have you really thought this through? Are you really going to let your father use the gene serum? It's only been three days! What can you really see in just three days? What if there are aftereffects? Also, is the use of the gene serum really legal? Have you ever considered all this?"

Upon hearing what he said, Janson took a deep breath and said solemnly, "Uncle Johnson, I know you are someone who takes rules and regulations very seriously, but this time, I would like to fight for my father's sake."

He clenched his jaw and said, "When my father was first gone, I felt like I was dreaming. It was very unreal and all I wanted was to avenge him. But during the last three days, I've thought about it countless times. If there is any way I can help Dad regain consciousness, I will try it without a second thought! Because he did not leave us even a word before he died. If I can get him to wake up for a short while, even if it's just for him to bid farewell to us, my mother won't be so sad anymore, right? "Uncle Johnson, you will support me, right?"

Johnson's eyes flickered and he said, "Why wouldn't I? Even I didn't get to properly bid farewell to Terry, let alone you! Everything had happened so quickly that day!"

He sighed bitterly and said, "I was too worked up afterward as well, and insisted on avenging him. If Morris hadn't stopped me, I might have killed Karl on the spot!" Speaking of Karl, Janson became agitated. "Is Captain Ford still defending him?"

Janson had been watching over Terry in the hospital the last three days, so he hadn't had time to confront Karl yet. "Sigh!" Johnson pretended to sigh. Then, he said, "You're on good terms with Mark, right? I heard that he went to the interrogation room to punch Karl and take revenge for you. But Captain Ford detained him before even before he could hit him! He even told him to reflect on his actions and write a report!"

"What?"

Janson clenched his fists in anger. "Just what exactly has Karl done to brainwash Captain Ford that he would defend him so much?!"

Johnson nodded. "Exactly! Captain Ford has been refusing to put Karl on trial. I really don't know what he's thinking. Poor Mark, though, he's still locked up right now."

Janson became furious and indignant. "Captain Ford has really become muddleheaded! He has never done this before. He is really disappointing me this time!"

After making use of the opportunity to paint a bad picture of Morris, Johnson said, "It'd be for the best if Terry can wake up. Otherwise, we won't be able to cement Karl's charges. Captain Ford will probably use the excuse of insufficient evidence to release him!"

Janson clenched his fists tightly.

At this time, the sound of footsteps traveled over from a distance away. The two looked over to see Morris and Nora walking over.

Nora was accompanied by a big and tall man. Although he fell behind by a few steps, it was impossible for anyone to ignore him. It was none other than Justin.

Morris asked, "Janson, how is your father doing?"

Janson sneered, "Do you even care how my father is doing, Captain Ford? Shouldn't you be more concerned about Karl's safety instead? Why aren't you staying by his side in the special department anymore?"

Upon hearing what he said, Morris kept quiet.

Nora, however, narrowed her eyes. Her gaze swept across Johnson and Janson impatiently and she asked, "So, do you want to treat your father's illness now?"

Janson nodded at once. "Yes!"

Although he didn't like Nora either-after all, Nora and Karl were on very close terms-she was the only one who could treat his father now.

With the box in her hand, Nora walked past Janson and entered the ward where Terry was.

Everyone went into the room one by one.

Johnson, who was at the end of the line, looked into the distance from time to time.

Justin raised his eyebrows and asked, "Waiting for someone, Captain Johnson?"

His one-liner made everyone look over.

Johnson immediately replied, "No, I'm not."

In spite of that, he became a little anxious. Why weren't the people from the inspection unit here yet?!

His brows drew together and he followed the others into the ward. Then, he saw Nora open the metal box. Right at this moment! The sound of footsteps suddenly traveled over from afar.

About seven to eight people rushed into the ward. The person leading the team said, "Morris Ford! We have received news that someone is conducting human experiments in the hospital! Such actions are absolutely prohibited! I demand that all of you stop what you are doing at once!"

The gene serum was the purpose of the special department's existence itself!

Yet not only had the special department not been able to catch the culprits behind the gene serum, but they were instead conducting human experiments of their own?

This must never be allowed!

The purpose of the inspection unit's existence was to keep Morris under strict control.

Morris frowned when he heard him.

Janson spoke up at once. "We are not conducting human experiments with the serum. We are trying to save a life!" The people from the inspection unit replied, "No, you can't do that! This needs further investigation! Someone has given us a signed tip-off saying that you people are conducting human experiments here in an attempt to turn the gene serum into medicine. You must stop such behavior at once!"

Janson was dumbfounded. "A signed tip-off?"

Justin immediately looked at Johnson. He was expressionless, but in his eyes was a look of clear understanding as though he had seen through everything. He said, "Captain Johnson has been waiting for someone the whole time. Might they be who he was waiting for? How did you know that they would come, Captain Johnson?"

His words made Janson look at Johnson incredulously. "Uncle Johnson?"

Johnson had originally wanted to refuse, but if he had given the tip-off anonymously, the people from the inspection unit wouldn't be able to come so quickly. He had no other choice, so his name had gone onto the records.

As such, he could only admit to it. He sighed and said, "I am doing this for your own good, Janson! Do you know what you are doing? Do you know how fearsome the gene serum is? How many people have died because of it? How many victims of human experiments have died because of it? It's a poison itself! You mustn't use it!"

Janson panicked. "Uncle Johnson, you saw it yourself! Quentin Smith managed to get back onto his feet! There's hope for my father now!"

Johnson shook his head and sighed. "It's useless. Even if it really works, you can only use it after it has gone through the inspection unit's checks. You can't use it on someone without going through the proper channels!" He adopted a righteous attitude and said, "Have you forgotten how much your father abhorred the gene serum? If he was conscious, do you think he would agree to you using it?"

Then, he looked at Morris and said, "And you, too. As the leader of the special department, how can you allow your subordinates to mess around? This has to be strictly rejected!"

A cold Morris suddenly sneered, "Captain Johnson, is it really because of these pretentious reasons that you're so opposed to this? Or is it because you're scared?! Scared that Terry will regain consciousness?" Johnson choked on his breath.

Janson turned to him abruptly.

Johnson immediately said, "Janson, you must trust me!"

Janson, however, kept quiet. At this point, the people from the inspection unit walked up to Morris and said, "We need to understand what is going on right now. Please cooperate with us! Captain Ford, are you aware that Nora Smith is intending to use the gene serum to treat Terry?"

Morris looked at Nora.

Nora raised her brows. Although she rarely socialized with others, she knew that Morris would probably be held accountable for the incident if he responded affirmatively.

Thus, before Morris could speak, she said, "This has nothing to do with him. I'm the one who wanted to use the gene serum to treat the patient and save his life."

The person from the inspection unit looked at her at once. He frowned and said, "Ms. Smith, in that case, are you aware that your actions could have severe repercussions? Your serum does not have sufficient experimental data to support its use. By rashly using it on a human, you are undoubtedly ignoring several medical principles!"

Nora raised her brows.

Before she could say anything, Janson's eyes suddenly reddened. "It's not her fault, I asked her to do it! I want to save my father!" The person from the inspection unit shook his head. "You are also at fault, but the main responsibility is not yours. We will definitely pursue this to the very end!"

Nora had already unsealed the bottle of gene serum in her hand. She was still holding the syringe as well.

Janson stared at Terry on the bed. During the last few days, Terry's vitals had been weakening further and further. Should the inspection unit's investigations take a few days to complete, by the time they are done investigating everything, Terry would probably die, regardless of whether or not they granted them permission to use the gene serum. Three days... According to what Nora had said, that was the longest Terry could survive for!

Janson felt a lump of frustration stuck in his throat, unable to go up or down.

He had indeed made a mistake, but he just wanted to save his father. Even Quentin's condition was improving, so why couldn't he inject his father with the gene serum?!

The person from the inspection unit said sternly, "Quentin Smith's condition is improving at the moment, but whether or not he really will recover, as well as what kind of aftereffects he may suffer are unknown. The gene serum has not even been tested on animals before. Therefore, according to the regulations, it is prohibited to inject humans with it! Besides, the gene serum is a strictly

controlled substance. Everything involving the drug is against the law! Despite that, you're still knowingly breaking the law, which makes what you're doing even more of a muddleheaded move! All of you are to cooperate with us and follow us back to the station for the investigation now!"

Janson was close to tearing up. "No, I can't..."

He turned to Morris. "Captain Ford, what should I do? What should I do now?"

The medicine that could save his father was clearly within sight, so why couldn't they use

Just as he was in tears and Morris was also at a loss, he suddenly heard an impatient and disgusted voice.

"Why are you crying? Can you even call yourself a man?"

Janson choked on his sobs.

His head whipped towards the back abruptly to see Nora still calmly standing where she was. Her arm was outstretched, and she had already inserted the needle into the bottle of gene serum. Then, she drew the remaining half of the bottle's contents into the syringe.

Seeing what she was doing, Johnson panicked at once. He shouted, "Nora Smith, what are you doing?"

Nora stared at the syringe in her hand. She pushed the syringe plunger with her fair fingers and cleanly expelled all the air inside. Then, her cat-like eyes turned to Janson and Morris frostily and she said only three words: "Hold them back."

Then, she strode towards the bed.

Janson and Morris were dumbfounded.

It was only when the people from the inspection unit reacted, yelled for Nora to stop what she was doing, and were about to rush over to snatch the syringe from her that Janson and Morris finally recovered from their daze.

The two hurriedly stopped in front of Nora and blocked her from them. "I'm not letting you over!"

Chaos broke out in the ward at once.

The sound of people pushing one another, loud arguing, and angry yells rang out one after another as though they were about to blow the roof off.

Amidst the fierce dispute, Nora took step after step towards Terry and walked up to him. Then, she lowered her head and plunged the needle into the blood vessel in Terry's arm.

She looked behind her at Johnson and the people from the inspection unit, whom Janson and Morris were keeping outside the door. Then, she exchanged a look with Justin, who was standing leisurely in front of her. After that, she slowly pushed the end of the syringe and injected the gene serum into Terry.

The inspection unit had more people on their side, after all, so they ultimately managed to break through Janson and Morris' defenses and rushed into the ward.

However, what entered their sight was instead Nora slowly pulling out the needle and pressing an alcohol-soaked cotton ball against the skin.

After crankily finishing all she had to do, she finally tossed the disposable syringe into the trash can. Then, she looked at the people from the inspection unit and Johnson. "Were you asking me to cooperate with you just now? Okay, I will fully cooperate with the investigation now."

"You people! All of you are too arrogant!" Never would Johnson have ever expected that Nora would solve the problem in such a simple and crude manner in front of the members of the inspection unit.

Was she not at all concerned about getting in trouble?

She was too much!

Johnson looked straight at the people from the inspection unit and pointed at Morris and Nora. "Did you guys see that? That is exactly how Captain Ford operates! Everything he does is utterly non-compliant with the rules and regulations! Also, they have stolen what they are supposed to be guarding! How can they extract the gene serum from patients?! What makes them any different from the members of the mysterious organization?!" An indignant Johnson criticized them accusingly.

The people from the inspection unit looked at the bed and asked, "What do we do? Is it possible to still extract the serum that has been injected into him?"

Next to him, the lip corners of the doctor who had come along with them spasmed. "Of course not," he replied.

After the man spoke, he craned his neck and glanced at the bed. Then, he said, "Terry's condition is simply too serious, though. It is near-impossible for anyone to take a bullet through the temples and survive.

"Never mind, let's just take them back with us for now and take our time to investigate!"

There was nothing the people from the inspection unit could do, either. They could only look at Morris, Nora, and Janson and say, "The three of you, please follow us back to the station to assist in the investigation!"

Janson looked at his father. He wanted to say something, but Morris suddenly said, "Terry is here on his last breath. Let Janson stay, I will come with you instead."

Terry had gotten injured while on duty, so everyone in the department felt a lot of heartache for him. Upon hearing what he said, after a moment's consideration, the group of them said to Janson, "You can stay in the hospital and observe your father's condition for now. However, you are not allowed to leave the hospital, and you must also make sure that you are available whenever we summon you!"

Gratitude welled up in Janson in this instant.

He looked at Morris and thought of how Johnson had called him unkind just now just because he had detained Mark, who had tried to punish Karl for his sake...

But as it turned out, deep down, Captain Ford understood everything better than anyone else.

Janson's resentment towards Morris for defending Karl all this time disappeared.

With his eyes red, he nodded. "Okay! Thank you, Captain Ford!"

Morris patted him on the shoulder quietly. Then, he looked at Nora. Just as he was about to speak, Nora yawned and said, "I will cooperate with the investigation."

Morris breathed a sigh of relief.

He was really afraid that the woman would leave the hospital in a moment of pique and end up getting into a conflict with the people from the inspection unit.

After all, she tended to employ unorthodox methods and was often defiant of authority.

While he was thinking about it, he heard Justin next to him suddenly say, "Excuse me, but where will you be taking them to? How long will the investigation be? Also, can they bring their own bedding?"

Upon hearing this, Morris' heart lifted slightly and he felt some inexplicable joy. A moment later, sure enough, he heard the people from the inspection unit hesitate for a moment before they replied, "Yes, they can."

"Alright, I will make some preparations, then."

Thus, half an hour later, when Morris and Nora got out of the inspection unit's car together, they immediately saw a group of attendants standing in front of the entrance to the special department.

Two of the attendants were carrying a 6 feet mattress. Some were carrying pillows and some were carrying quilts. All of them were standing there respectfully.

Justin did not take the same car as them, but he was also standing there calmly. When he saw them, he waved at the person who had led the inspection unit during the operation and said, "Hi~"

Everyone: "..."

Morris stared at Justin, and then glanced at Nora who couldn't stop yawning. It seemed like she couldn't even keep her eyes open anymore. All of a sudden, he felt really good. How frustrated he had felt when those two treated him this way the last time was how happy he currently was.

Because they had said that they could bring their own beddings—after all, Nora and Morris' actions were still under investigation, and both of them were talents from the special department—they couldn't request that they take the beddings back now, either. They could only watch helplessly as Justin entered the department with all the bedding.

He chose the most spacious interrogation room there, after all, if the room was too small, the big mattress wouldn't fit.

Then, they speedily transformed the interrogation room into a hotel room in just two minutes.

Nora entered and took off her shoes. Although she also felt that Justin's actions were a little exaggerated, she nevertheless obediently sat on the bed.

After that, someone from the inspection unit entered and said, "Ms. Nora Smith, please cooperate with us in the investigation. May I know if,"

"Can I close my eyes and rest for a while?"

Nora suddenly spoke and interrupted the other party. "... Yes, sure."

He assumed that she would just be napping for half an hour when she asked to "rest for a while", but unexpectedly... When he exited the room, he immediately saw Justin standing outside. He closed the door obediently and instructed, "She hasn't slept for three days. You can ask her your questions after she wakes

up."

Although he didn't know how Justin had entered the inspection unit's premises—after all, strangers were not allowed entry—the man in charge of interrogating Nora nevertheless replied, "... Alright, I guess!"

They were all colleagues. He mustn't go too far!

And then...

He learned the meaning of the words "Queen of Sleep".

Five hours later, he came over and found that Justin had moved a chair over to the door. The man, who was sitting outside the door, shushed him.

Surprised, the interrogator asked, “She’s still asleep?” “Yes.”

Justin sighed. “After all, my Nora forgets to even eat and sleep once she starts working. She doesn’t know what rest is at all. Sigh!”

The corners of his lips spasmed. “Alright.”

When he turned to leave, Justin suddenly said, “Um…”

When he turned back, Justin said, “Can you tell the people in the interrogation room next door to keep it down a little? The interrogation rooms here are not as soundproof as I’d thought!”

While Nora was dead to the world, the situation in the hospital was also changing.

With Morris temporarily taken away, Johnson became the provisional leader of the special department. He also stayed in the hospital and stood outside Terry’s ward.

Five hours had passed. After checking and analyzing Terry’s condition, the forensic doctor came out. Johnson hurriedly asked, “How is he?”

He suppressed his nervousness.

He knew that there was no way Terry would survive. No matter how godly one’s medical skills were, surely there was no way missing brain cells could be recovered, right?

But unexpectedly, the forensic doctor’s brows drew together tightly, and then, with a fervent look on his face, he said, “It’s too amazing! It’s simply too amazing!” A foreboding feeling welled up in Johnson. “What happened?”

The man replied, “Terry’s brain cells are really recovering!!” They were recovering?

Johnson was utterly stunned. He said incredulously, “What?”

The doctor took a deep breath and said, “Terry will really be able to wake up in another day’s time!”

Johnson had always been someone who could keep himself calm.

From the start to the end, he had never believed that someone who had taken a bullet through the temples could survive.

That was why he had not done anything all this time. Neither would he leave behind any potential blackmail material for Nora.

However, things were starting to develop more and more bizarrely.

Even the inspection unit's forensic doctor was saying that Terry had a chance of regaining consciousness?

However, he mustn't panic.

Regaining consciousness did not mean that he would remember the past! Surely there was no way newly-grown brain cells would retain past memories, right?

He couldn't help asking, "Would he remember what had happened in the past?"

The forensic doctor replied, "One's memories are stored in the central nervous system. As long as the nerves are not destroyed, the memories could be retained. It all still depends on Terry's condition after he wakes up!"

Johnson was dumbfounded when he heard this.

The forensic doctor went back into the ward and continued to observe Terry's condition.

Johnson stood outside. Then, he suddenly turned and headed outside. When he was about to go down the stairs, he saw Lily supporting Quentin as he walked about in the corridor.

Shockingly enough, Quentin, whose body had been limp all over, could already walk a great distance without any help or stops.

Lily was even giving him compliments. She said, "Nice! Your recovery is progressing so fast!"

Quentin explained, "Yeah, I can feel my body repairing itself bit by bit every day. I can feel the bones growing, it's as if something is bubbling inside me... It's amazing! I'd always known that Nora's medical skills were amazing, but I didn't expect them to be this good!"

Lily also nodded. "I finally understand why people are chasing after the gene serum. It's simply too amazing!"

Johnson kept walking downstairs as he listened to their conversation.

He lit up a cigarette downstairs in the hospital and started smoking, his emotions becoming more and more irritable.

He extinguished the cigarette butt and tossed it into the trash can. Only then did he get into his car and make his way to the special department.

As soon as he stepped inside the special department, everyone there gathered around him. They looked at him and asked, "Captain Johnson, what happened to Captain Ford? Did he really violate the regulations?"

"Captain Johnson, shouldn't Mark be released by now?" The attitude of the people in the department towards Johnson had clearly become a lot more enthusiastic than before, all just because Morris hadn't immediately taken revenge for Janson when the accident happened. This had made everyone unhappy with him.

Johnson smiled and replied, "He's fine, they are just trying to thoroughly investigate what had happened. All of you are also aware that Captain Ford's way of doing things is too non-compliant with the rules. Sigh! Alright, let's just free Mark for now! Also, you all shouldn't be gathering here. Go and do what you're supposed to be doing!" Everyone nodded.

They wanted to say more, but Johnson had already entered his office. He took out another cigarette and started to smoke. He was still waiting-waiting for further news from the hospital about Terry's condition. Brain damage could lead to many different scenarios. He couldn't take any risks yet!

After some time, it gradually turned dark outside.

Someone suddenly pushed open the door to Johnson's office. An excited Mark rushed in and said, "Johnson, I think Karl is about to be convicted of his crimes!"

Johnson was surprised. "What do you mean?"

Mark replied, "Janson just contacted me and said that Terry opened his eyes today! He obviously wanted to say something, but because he couldn't control

his body yet, he couldn't speak. Janson also said that Terry will be able to speak after another day's time. When that happens, we will have a testimony! Let's see what Karl has to say after that!"

Panic entered Johnson's eyes, but he nevertheless feigned surprise and said, "Really? That's great!"

After Mark reported the "good news", he left the office.

Johnson stayed in the office for a while more. He suddenly extinguished the cigarette. A sharp look flashed in his eyes. After that, he went out and called Mark over.

He instructed, "Interrogate Karl overnight and try your best to get him to confess to his crimes! This will be a gift for Terry once he wakes up!"

A fierce look appeared in Mark's eyes. "Don't worry, I will definitely get you a satisfactory outcome!"

Johnson nodded. "I'll head to the hospital and watch over Terry, and strive to get a statement from him! This way, we'll be able to have Karl convicted as quickly as possible!"

"Yes, sir."

Johnson then went out and drove off. However, he did not go to the hospital. He stopped by a pharmacy and bought some drugs capable of instantly suffocating someone...

When Johnson arrived at the hospital, he found Janson asleep outside Terry's ward.

He looked around vigilantly.

As a professional with many years of experience in the industry, he had been suspecting all this time that all of this was just a trap that Morris and Nora were trying to lure him into.

Even though the two of them had been taken away by the inspection unit, Johnson did not let his guard down in the least.

He had always been a perceptive, paranoid, and meticulous person. Otherwise, he would not have become Morris' mentor back then.

His rash, irritable, and upright personality on the surface was all just a disguise to establish a sense of harmlessness to the leaders above, so that he would be promoted quickly.

As facts had proven, he had indeed succeeded.

That act of his had deceived a lot of people. All of them had let their guard down around him. In fact, the people involved in innumerable workplace traps back then had all underestimated him because of his disguised carelessness, allowing him to make comebacks and turn defeat into victory.

Thus, even at this moment, Johnson's first reaction was not to enter the ward in a hurry and kill Terry, but to observe the surroundings.

With his years of experience and surprisingly sharp intuition, he made sure that there wasn't anyone watching him in the surroundings and that he wasn't being plotted against by anyone. At last, he lightly pushed open the door to the ward and went in.

In the ward, Terry was lying on the bed. He had lost a lot of weight due to his coma over the past few days. His head was wrapped in white gauze, and he was unconscious, his eyes closed.

The first thing Johnson did was inspect the ward. Even after confirming that there weren't any surveillance cameras there, he did not immediately inject the toxic chemicals into Terry. Instead, he observed his vitals.

His heart rate was maintained at a little past sixty and was very stable. Although it was a little slower than normal, it was still considered healthy.

The other numbers were also indeed very good, which indicated that Terry was alive and recovering

The gene serum was indeed impressive.

With that in mind, Terry avoided all the angles that might allow one to photograph him, took out the deadly chemicals from his pocket, and injected them right into Terry.

He moved smoothly in one go without any hesitation whatsoever, fully exhibiting the competency of a professional.

When he was done, he took a step back. Shortly after, the monitor emitted a sharp beep. He gave Janson a push before he even woke up. Then, he shouted, “Janson, quick, come over and take a look! What’s the matter with Terry?”

Janson opened his eyes in a daze. Upon hearing the warning alarm from the monitor, blood drained from his face. The hospital staff had also rushed over by then. Unfortunately, the heart rate monitor was only showing a straight line.

Terry was dead.

He had died a day after being injected with the gene serum. The cause of death was cardiac arrest, which seemed like a heart attack, yet also seemed like it was caused by the gene serum.

His body was taken away by the people from the inspection unit. Janson was extremely dispirited. Never would he have thought things would turn out like this. Quentin was obviously still well and alive in the ward next door... When news of the incident reached the special department, most of the colleagues felt their hearts sinking.

Johnson quickly returned to the department to counsel everyone. He sighed and said, “The gene serum was nothing good right from the start. Most people have lost their lives after being injected with it. I was already opposed to the idea back when Nora wanted to use it to treat Terry, but they simply refused to listen... And Morris, too. I really don’t know how Nora managed to brainwash him so badly that he actually trusts her so much and goes along with her ridiculous actions!”

The others also sighed.

Janson stared at Johnson.

He had a suspicion in his heart, but he didn’t know whether he should trust Johnson or not. Seemingly sensing his hostility, Johnson walked up to him and said, “Janson, you now understand why I tipped off the inspection unit, right? I really did it for Terry! The gene serum cannot be counted on at all! God knows how much Terry must have suffered during the past few days! I wonder if he could feel any pain when he was unconscious...”

As Johnson spoke, Janson’s eyes reddened.

Johnson sighed and said, "For all his life, Terry had been at odds with the people behind the gene serum. I never expected that he would still have to suffer such torture before his death. Janson, can you understand my good intentions?"

Janson suddenly clenched his fists. Nevertheless, he replied sensibly, "Nora only used the gene serum in order to save my father's life, even though it failed in the end... The real murderer is Karl Moore!"

He said, "I request that we close the case and convict Karl as soon as possible!"

Johnson shook his head and sighed. After a while, he said, "The special department has the right to convict a criminal of their crimes, but the problem is that only the acting director has the right to do that! Now that Morris has been taken away by the inspection unit, no one in the department has the right to do that anymore!"

He frowned at once and said, "I wonder when the investigation into Morris will be completed. Also, when will the new acting director be assigned?"

The moment he said that, Janson was slightly taken aback.

He, who was still in the throes of pain from losing his father, got the vague feeling that Johnson was bringing up the matter because he wanted to fight for power. But before he could say anything, Mark, who was next to him, said angrily, "That's easy! We can jointly propose to remove Captain Ford from his post and then support Captain Johnson as the acting director in the interim! When that happens, you will be able to convict Karl of his crimes!"

Johnson frowned when he heard what he said. "That's... not quite a good idea, is it? Although Morris has done something muddleheaded, it was Nora who had deceived him..."

Mark immediately gritted his teeth and said, "Captain Ford has indeed become muddleheaded! The way he looks at Nora isn't right. For so many years, he has always been firm and impartial, but how many outlandish things has he done for Nora? All I did was interrogate Karl for a short while the other time, yet he actually locked me up!"

Mark and Janson were best buddies. He often went over to their place for meals. As his senior, Terry had also taught him a lot, and he had benefited a lot from his teachings.

That was why Mark was so worked up. He didn't even wait for Johnson to speak and immediately said, "A lot of people in the department think so too. Just wait for it, Captain Johnson, I'll take care of this!"

After speaking, Mark ran off.

Janson looked at him from the back, his eyes were all red.

A day later, the inspection unit came to the special department, planning to investigate the incident about Terry and also to announce the final outcome. As the incident had blown up a great deal in the special department, and also because Morris had gone against everyone's will to protect Karl, they had decided to hold a huge conference to resolve the matter.

Seeing everything going smoothly, Johnson finally relaxed. He felt that things were undoubtedly going very smoothly and there wouldn't be any unexpected issues.

Karl's case had already been reported to the organization. Many people knew about this matter, and it attracted wide attention. Of course, this was still Captain Johnson's doing

Morris was powerful and had accumulated a lot of connections over the years. After the incident, many people had spoken up for him and put pressure on the inspection unit. The inspection unit had originally planned to let Morris be released early, but with Old Terry's death along with Captain Johnson's actions, it was not appropriate to let him go. After all, if they were to forcefully let him go now, it would probably arouse the displeasure of the crowd.

The large conference room of the special department could accommodate a hundred people. All the staff members of the special department were present. Morris had broken the law and helped Nora give Old Terry the gene serum. This matter was going to be judged today. After all, Morris's actions at that time were to save people, so the inspection unit did not know how to punish him.

At this moment, the meeting room was fully packed.

Most of the people inside were divided into two parts.

A portion of them was of Morris's loyal supporters. They had worked with him for many years and believed in him. They even said, "Captain Ford is also doing this to save people! If there are lives in danger, would we not prioritize saving people over violating some rules?"

The other group was led by Mark.

Janson was heartbroken and depressed, but Mark was indignant and retorted, "Then why didn't he convict Karl even after so long? He didn't even allow me to interrogate him! There must be something wrong!"

"That's right. Don't we know what gene serums are? They're harmful! They're poison! This is what we've been fighting against. Over the years, how many colleagues have been sacrificed to fight against the mysterious organization that makes this gene serum? In the end, you want to use this thing on one of our own? How ridiculous!"

The person supporting Morris said, "But Captain Ford did it to save people!" "But Old Terry is dead! He's not saved! The facts have proven that we were right! Captain Ford is too extreme. The special department has even become his one-man hall! Also, why is the trial against Karl Moore delayed? We clearly have all the evidence!"

As the crowd was in a heated argument, the door to the meeting room was pushed open. Then, accompanied by a staff member from the inspection unit, Morris strode into the meeting room.

The moment he entered, the entire conference room instantly became silent.

Everyone looked at him.

As he had been detained for two days, a black beard had appeared on Morris's chin. At this moment, he looked more like a mature man.

His gaze was like an eagle as it swept across everyone present, causing them to shut their mouths.

Morris and a few people from the Ministry of Supervision sat on the stage and looked down. One of them then started speaking, "Alright, now the special department is divided into two factions regarding Morris's situation. One half

thinks that Captain Ford has been negligent in his work. As long as he apologizes to Janson, this matter will be over. The other half thinks that Captain Ford has used illegal drugs from the special department recklessly and seriously violated the law. He should be dismissed from his post till further investigation! Now, we want to ask the public's opinion!"

As soon as he said this, the two sides started arguing again.

Their words were the same as earlier.

Looking at the heated discussion, Captain Johnson suddenly said, "Um, I'll say something. Everyone, please listen to me."

He sighed and said, "I was the one who brought Morris into this industry. Now that I'm going to judge him, I really can't bear it. But there's nothing I can do. He has done something wrong and made some bad judgments! If anyone gets hurt in the future and says that the gene serum can be used to save lives, will he break the law and take it out again? We have to firmly put an end to such things! Therefore, in this situation, I suggest reducing the punishment for Morris. A dismissal is too serious. We should let him work from the bottom again and punish him with three months of salary cut as a show of service. I wonder if anyone has any objections?"

This kind of neutralized opinion instantly shook the people below.

Those who originally thought that Morris should be punished but still had some feelings for him and could not bear to remove him from the Investigation Committee immediately nodded.

Those who were originally on Morris's side also felt that this plan was reasonable...

For a moment, this proposal from Captain Johnson received the agreement of most people!

Mark stood up as well. "To be honest, Captain Ford has indeed worked hard and provided meritorious service all these years. I think it's too big of a punishment for him to be dismissed. I can't bear for Captain Morris to leave either. I think what Captain Johnson has said can be done! If he starts from the bottom again, I believe Captain Ford will be able to rely on his contributions to return to this position quickly!"

Everyone nodded. "Yes."

When Captain Johnson heard this, he was very satisfied.

He was doing this on purpose!

Morris had too many connections and too deep of a background. He could not possibly slap Morris to death. He could only take a step back and let him resign. Then, the chair of the Special Case Department Head would be his now!

This was his goal.

Seeing that everyone below had agreed, the people from the inspection unit then looked at Morris. "Captain Ford, do you have any objections to this punishment?"

With that, everyone looked at Morris.

Morris lowered his eyes. After a moment, he suddenly looked up and said slowly, "Yes."

Everyone fell silent again.

Captain Johnson frowned. "Morris, this punishment is already very light. You knew the rules and violated them, so you have to pay the price. People can't just be forgiven when they've done something wrong!"

"You're right."

Morris laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. "It's very hard to cover up when you've done something wrong. What about a murderer? Compared to my mistake, isn't your mistake more serious?"

These words made Captain Johnson's pupils shrink. He sneered and said, "Morris, Karl keeps saying that I killed Old Terry, but do you really trust him over me? You've really disappointed me. Do you have any evidence to say that I have killed someone?"

"Of course."

Morris said slowly, "Not only do I have evidence, but I also have a witness!"

With that, he looked at the door. He was clearly here to be judged, but he turned the tables and said, "Come in."

Accompanying this sentence, Nora strode in lazily and yawned, pushing a wheelchair along.

Her face was filled with impatience as if she had not slept enough. Her expression was not very good.

However, no one noticed that at the moment. Everyone's attention was on the person in the wheelchair.

It was Old Terry.

When Old Terry appeared on the scene, the entire audience was shocked.

Janson stood up in shock and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Why was his father here?

He should be in the hospital's mortuary. While Janson was so shocked, Captain Johnson's heart was already in turmoil!

Old Terry... He was clearly dead!

He couldn't be alive after he had drugged him.

He swallowed hard and looked at Old Terry in horror. The person who had appeared there was like a demon! A demon that had climbed out of hell.

Before Captain Johnson could speak, Janson's eyes were already red. He took a step forward. "Dad, you're still alive?"

Old Terry's head was wrapped in gauze. The gauze on his head covered half his head, and the other half was horribly swollen. His voice seemed to be blocked by something in his throat. It was very hoarse, and it was very uncomfortable to hear.

He slowly said, "I'm not dead, I'm still alive."

It was really him!

Everyone present widened their eyes. Why was he still alive?

Old Terry's next answer puzzled everyone. "The gene serum can even restore brain cells. How could I have died?"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He thought that he could rest easy after seeing Old Terry die with his own eyes. However, he did not expect him to be alive! Had the gene serum cured the poison he had injected?

How could... this be?!

Thus, in the end, even if he was meticulous, he had still lost to fate!

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. "Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl's words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson's name!"

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. "Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn't come yesterday was because I couldn't figure out why you had shot me?"

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, "Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. "Old Terry, are you confused? I think you're just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?"

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, "Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even

in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I'd retired him from undercover duty. You didn't tell him, did you?"

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. "Old Terry, I don't know what you're talking about!"

Old Terry sighed again. "You know, I have evidence that he's an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I've never doubted you. Over the years, you've used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don't you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?"

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry's last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, "Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?"

Captain Johnson stammered, "How... how would I know? He didn't buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?"

Old Terry's voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. "We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?"

Captain Johnson was flustered. "You..."

"Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me! You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We've already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can't deny it!"

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, "Captain Johnson, aren't you going to confess now?"

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, "And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you're much better than me? I just want money, but you're in cahoots with the people from the

mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!”

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. “Captain Johnson, what we’re talking about now is your murder charge.” Captain Johnson sneered and said, “I’m at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora’s crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they’ve done is beneficial to humans!” “Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?” “And you, Old Terry. Don’t look at me like that. You’re stupid. You don’t know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I’ve risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?”

He looked around. “Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we’ve been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!”

“Morris, I attempted murder. You’re not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!” If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. “Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. “Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!”

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and

is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl’s innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin’s injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already

collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, “Justin, you were married to your job when you weren’t with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?”

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, “Let’s go home and catch up on your sleep.”

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. “Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!”

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, “It’s about the child! You’ll regret it if you don’t listen!”

About the child?

Justin’s footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. “Miss Ruth, let’s talk!”

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, “I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It’s about the child! His son!”

Lawrence lowered his eyes. “What’s wrong with Pete? Tell me first.”

Ruth’s eyes were firm as she slowly said, “No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won’t say anything until I see him!”

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay

that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!”

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, “The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!”

He didn’t give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, “Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don’t you go home for now?”

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, “Joel, don’t push me. Isn’t it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I’m here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?”

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, “Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it’s all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!”

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel’s voice became even colder. “Grandaunt Sue, don’t force me into taking action against

you!”

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, “Then why don’t you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!”

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving

us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. “Do I smell? I’ve been taking baths every day in the special department!”

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: “...”

She pushed Karl’s arm away and sighed. “There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?”

Karl’s eyes lit up. “Yes!”

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, “What do you need, Ma’am? Let me do it!”

“No, it’s fine,” replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, “Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn’t let us help at all! You’re so blessed, Mr. Moore!”

The simple-looking Karl couldn’t stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 542 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Morris asked, "Janson, how is your father doing?"

Janson sneered, "Do you even care how my father is doing, Captain Ford? Shouldn't you be more concerned about Karl's safety instead? Why aren't you staying by his side in the special department anymore?"

Upon hearing what he said, Morris kept quiet.

Nora, however, narrowed her eyes. Her gaze swept across Johnson and Janson impatiently and she asked, "So, do you want to treat your father's illness now?"

Janson nodded at once. "Yes!"

Although he didn't like Nora either-after all, Nora and Karl were on very close terms-she was the only one who could treat his father now.

With the box in her hand, Nora walked past Janson and entered the ward where Terry was.

Everyone went into the room one by one.

Johnson, who was at the end of the line, looked into the distance from time to time.

Justin raised his eyebrows and asked, "Waiting for someone, Captain Johnson?"

His one-liner made everyone look over.

Johnson immediately replied, "No, I'm not."

In spite of that, he became a little anxious. Why weren't the people from the inspection unit here yet?!

His brows drew together and he followed the others into the ward. Then, he saw Nora open the metal box. Right at this moment! The sound of footsteps suddenly traveled over from afar.

About seven to eight people rushed into the ward. The person leading the team said, "Morris Ford! We have received news that someone is conducting human experiments in the hospital! Such actions are absolutely prohibited! I demand that all of you stop what you are doing at once!"

The gene serum was the purpose of the special department's existence itself!

Yet not only had the special department not been able to catch the culprits behind the gene serum, but they were instead conducting human experiments of their own?

This must never be allowed!

The purpose of the inspection unit's existence was to keep Morris under strict control.

Morris frowned when he heard him.

Janson spoke up at once. "We are not conducting human experiments with the serum. We are trying to save a life!" The people from the inspection unit replied, "No, you can't do that! This needs further investigation! Someone has given us a signed tip-off saying that you people are conducting human experiments here in an attempt to turn the gene serum into medicine. You must stop such behavior at once!"

Janson was dumbfounded. "A signed tip-off?"

Justin immediately looked at Johnson. He was expressionless, but in his eyes was a look of clear understanding as though he had seen through everything. He said, "Captain Johnson has been waiting for someone the whole time. Might they be who he was waiting for? How did you know that they would come, Captain Johnson?"

His words made Janson look at Johnson incredulously. “Uncle Johnson?”

Johnson had originally wanted to refuse, but if he had given the tip-off anonymously, the people from the inspection unit wouldn't be able to come so quickly. He had no other choice, so his name had gone onto the records.

As such, he could only admit to it. He sighed and said, “I am doing this for your own good, Janson! Do you know what you are doing? Do you know how fearsome the gene serum is? How many people have died because of it? How many victims of human experiments have died because of it? It's a poison itself! You mustn't use it!”

Janson panicked. “Uncle Johnson, you saw it yourself! Quentin Smith managed to get back onto his feet! There's hope for my father now!”

Johnson shook his head and sighed. “It's useless. Even if it really works, you can only use it after it has gone through the inspection unit's checks. You can't use it on someone without going through the proper channels!” He adopted a righteous attitude and said, “Have you forgotten how much your father abhorred the gene serum? If he was conscious, do you think he would agree to you using it?”

Then, he looked at Morris and said, “And you, too. As the leader of the special department, how can you allow your subordinates to mess around? This has to be strictly rejected!”

A cold Morris suddenly sneered, “Captain Johnson, is it really because of these pretentious reasons that you're so opposed to this? Or is it because you're scared?! Scared that Terry will regain consciousness?” Johnson choked on his breath.

Janson turned to him abruptly.

Johnson immediately said, “Janson, you must trust me!”

Janson, however, kept quiet. At this point, the people from the inspection unit walked up to Morris and said, “We need to understand what is going on right now. Please cooperate with us! Captain Ford, are you aware that Nora Smith is intending to use the gene serum to treat Terry?”

Morris looked at Nora.

Nora raised her brows. Although she rarely socialized with others, she knew that Morris would probably be held accountable for the incident if he responded affirmatively.

Thus, before Morris could speak, she said, "This has nothing to do with him. I'm the one who wanted to use the gene serum to treat the patient and save his life."

The person from the inspection unit looked at her at once. He frowned and said, "Ms. Smith, in that case, are you aware that your actions could have severe repercussions? Your serum does not have sufficient experimental data to support its use. By rashly using it on a human, you are undoubtedly ignoring several medical principles!"

Nora raised her brows.

Before she could say anything, Janson's eyes suddenly reddened. "It's not her fault, I asked her to do it! I want to save my father!" The person from the inspection unit shook his head. "You are also at fault, but the main responsibility is not yours. We will definitely pursue this to the very end!"

Nora had already unsealed the bottle of gene serum in her hand. She was still holding the syringe as well.

Janson stared at Terry on the bed. During the last few days, Terry's vitals had been weakening further and further. Should the inspection unit's investigations take a few days to complete, by the time they are done investigating everything, Terry would probably die, regardless of whether or not they granted them permission to use the gene serum. Three days... According to what Nora had said, that was the longest Terry could survive for!

Janson felt a lump of frustration stuck in his throat, unable to go up or down.

He had indeed made a mistake, but he just wanted to save his father. Even Quentin's condition was improving, so why couldn't he inject his father with the gene serum?!

The person from the inspection unit said sternly, "Quentin Smith's condition is improving at the moment, but whether or not he really will recover, as well as what kind of aftereffects he may suffer are unknown. The gene serum has not even been tested on animals before. Therefore, according to the regulations, it is prohibited to inject humans with it! Besides, the gene serum is a strictly

controlled substance. Everything involving the drug is against the law! Despite that, you're still knowingly breaking the law, which makes what you're doing even more of a muddleheaded move! All of you are to cooperate with us and follow us back to the station for the investigation now!"

Janson was close to tearing up. "No, I can't..."

He turned to Morris. "Captain Ford, what should I do? What should I do now?"

The medicine that could save his father was clearly within sight, so why couldn't they use

Just as he was in tears and Morris was also at a loss, he suddenly heard an impatient and disgusted voice.

"Why are you crying? Can you even call yourself a man?"

Janson choked on his sobs.

His head whipped towards the back abruptly to see Nora still calmly standing where she was. Her arm was outstretched, and she had already inserted the needle into the bottle of gene serum. Then, she drew the remaining half of the bottle's contents into the syringe.

Seeing what she was doing, Johnson panicked at once. He shouted, "Nora Smith, what are you doing?"

Nora stared at the syringe in her hand. She pushed the syringe plunger with her fair fingers and cleanly expelled all the air inside. Then, her cat-like eyes turned to Janson and Morris frostily and she said only three words: "Hold them back."

Then, she strode towards the bed.

Janson and Morris were dumbfounded.

It was only when the people from the inspection unit reacted, yelled for Nora to stop what she was doing, and were about to rush over to snatch the syringe from her that Janson and Morris finally recovered from their daze.

The two hurriedly stopped in front of Nora and blocked her from them. "I'm not letting you over!"

Chaos broke out in the ward at once.

The sound of people pushing one another, loud arguing, and angry yells rang out one after another as though they were about to blow the roof off.

Amidst the fierce dispute, Nora took step after step towards Terry and walked up to him. Then, she lowered her head and plunged the needle into the blood vessel in Terry's arm.

She looked behind her at Johnson and the people from the inspection unit, whom Janson and Morris were keeping outside the door. Then, she exchanged a look with Justin, who was standing leisurely in front of her. After that, she slowly pushed the end of the syringe and injected the gene serum into Terry.

The inspection unit had more people on their side, after all, so they ultimately managed to break through Janson and Morris' defenses and rushed into the ward.

However, what entered their sight was instead Nora slowly pulling out the needle and pressing an alcohol-soaked cotton ball against the skin.

After crankily finishing all she had to do, she finally tossed the disposable syringe into the trash can. Then, she looked at the people from the inspection unit and Johnson. "Were you asking me to cooperate with you just now? Okay, I will fully cooperate with the investigation now."

"You people! All of you are too arrogant!" Never would Johnson have ever expected that Nora would solve the problem in such a simple and crude manner in front of the members of the inspection unit.

Was she not at all concerned about getting in trouble?

She was too much!

Johnson looked straight at the people from the inspection unit and pointed at Morris and Nora. "Did you guys see that? That is exactly how Captain Ford operates! Everything he does is utterly non-compliant with the rules and regulations! Also, they have stolen what they are supposed to be guarding! How can they extract the gene serum from patients?! What makes them any different from the members of the mysterious organization?!" An indignant Johnson criticized them accusingly.

The people from the inspection unit looked at the bed and asked, "What do we do? Is it possible to still extract the serum that has been injected into him?"

Next to him, the lip corners of the doctor who had come along with them spasmed. "Of course not," he replied.

After the man spoke, he craned his neck and glanced at the bed. Then, he said, "Terry's condition is simply too serious, though. It is near-impossible for anyone to take a bullet through the temples and survive.

"Never mind, let's just take them back with us for now and take our time to investigate!"

There was nothing the people from the inspection unit could do, either. They could only look at Morris, Nora, and Janson and say, "The three of you, please follow us back to the station to assist in the investigation!"

Janson looked at his father. He wanted to say something, but Morris suddenly said, "Terry is here on his last breath. Let Janson stay, I will come with you instead."

Terry had gotten injured while on duty, so everyone in the department felt a lot of heartache for him. Upon hearing what he said, after a moment's consideration, the group of them said to Janson, "You can stay in the hospital and observe your father's condition for now. However, you are not allowed to leave the hospital, and you must also make sure that you are available whenever we summon you!"

Gratitude welled up in Janson in this instant.

He looked at Morris and thought of how Johnson had called him unkind just now just because he had detained Mark, who had tried to punish Karl for his sake...

But as it turned out, deep down, Captain Ford understood everything better than anyone else.

Janson's resentment towards Morris for defending Karl all this time disappeared.

With his eyes red, he nodded. "Okay! Thank you, Captain Ford!"

Morris patted him on the shoulder quietly. Then, he looked at Nora. Just as he was about to speak, Nora yawned and said, "I will cooperate with the investigation."

Morris breathed a sigh of relief.

He was really afraid that the woman would leave the hospital in a moment of pique and end up getting into a conflict with the people from the inspection unit.

After all, she tended to employ unorthodox methods and was often defiant of authority.

While he was thinking about it, he heard Justin next to him suddenly say, "Excuse me, but where will you be taking them to? How long will the investigation be? Also, can they bring their own bedding?"

Upon hearing this, Morris' heart lifted slightly and he felt some inexplicable joy. A moment later, sure enough, he heard the people from the inspection unit hesitate for a moment before they replied, "Yes, they can."

"Alright, I will make some preparations, then."

Thus, half an hour later, when Morris and Nora got out of the inspection unit's car together, they immediately saw a group of attendants standing in front of the entrance to the special department.

Two of the attendants were carrying a 6 feet mattress. Some were carrying pillows and some were carrying quilts. All of them were standing there respectfully.

Justin did not take the same car as them, but he was also standing there calmly. When he saw them, he waved at the person who had led the inspection unit during the operation and said, "Hi~"

Everyone: "..."

Morris stared at Justin, and then glanced at Nora who couldn't stop yawning. It seemed like she couldn't even keep her eyes open anymore. All of a sudden, he felt really good. How frustrated he had felt when those two treated him this way the last time was how happy he currently was.

Because they had said that they could bring their own beddings—after all, Nora and Morris' actions were still under investigation, and both of them were talents from the special department—they couldn't request that they take the beddings back now, either. They could only watch helplessly as Justin entered the department with all the bedding.

He chose the most spacious interrogation room there, after all, if the room was too small, the big mattress wouldn't fit.

Then, they speedily transformed the interrogation room into a hotel room in just two minutes.

Nora entered and took off her shoes. Although she also felt that Justin's actions were a little exaggerated, she nevertheless obediently sat on the bed.

After that, someone from the inspection unit entered and said, "Ms. Nora Smith, please cooperate with us in the investigation. May I know if,"

"Can I close my eyes and rest for a while?"

Nora suddenly spoke and interrupted the other party. "... Yes, sure."

He assumed that she would just be napping for half an hour when she asked to "rest for a while", but unexpectedly... When he exited the room, he immediately saw Justin standing outside. He closed the door obediently and instructed, "She hasn't slept for three days. You can ask her your questions after she wakes

up."

Although he didn't know how Justin had entered the inspection unit's premises—after all, strangers were not allowed entry—the man in charge of interrogating Nora nevertheless replied, "... Alright, I guess!"

They were all colleagues. He mustn't go too far!

And then...

He learned the meaning of the words "Queen of Sleep".

Five hours later, he came over and found that Justin had moved a chair over to the door. The man, who was sitting outside the door, shushed him.

Surprised, the interrogator asked, “She’s still asleep?” “Yes.”

Justin sighed. “After all, my Nora forgets to even eat and sleep once she starts working. She doesn’t know what rest is at all. Sigh!”

The corners of his lips spasmed. “Alright.”

When he turned to leave, Justin suddenly said, “Um…”

When he turned back, Justin said, “Can you tell the people in the interrogation room next door to keep it down a little? The interrogation rooms here are not as soundproof as I’d thought!”

While Nora was dead to the world, the situation in the hospital was also changing.

With Morris temporarily taken away, Johnson became the provisional leader of the special department. He also stayed in the hospital and stood outside Terry’s ward.

Five hours had passed. After checking and analyzing Terry’s condition, the forensic doctor came out. Johnson hurriedly asked, “How is he?”

He suppressed his nervousness.

He knew that there was no way Terry would survive. No matter how godly one’s medical skills were, surely there was no way missing brain cells could be recovered, right?

But unexpectedly, the forensic doctor’s brows drew together tightly, and then, with a fervent look on his face, he said, “It’s too amazing! It’s simply too amazing!” A foreboding feeling welled up in Johnson. “What happened?”

The man replied, “Terry’s brain cells are really recovering!!” They were recovering?

Johnson was utterly stunned. He said incredulously, “What?”

The doctor took a deep breath and said, “Terry will really be able to wake up in another day’s time!”

Johnson had always been someone who could keep himself calm.

From the start to the end, he had never believed that someone who had taken a bullet through the temples could survive.

That was why he had not done anything all this time. Neither would he leave behind any potential blackmail material for Nora.

However, things were starting to develop more and more bizarrely.

Even the inspection unit's forensic doctor was saying that Terry had a chance of regaining consciousness?

However, he mustn't panic.

Regaining consciousness did not mean that he would remember the past! Surely there was no way newly-grown brain cells would retain past memories, right?

He couldn't help asking, "Would he remember what had happened in the past?"

The forensic doctor replied, "One's memories are stored in the central nervous system. As long as the nerves are not destroyed, the memories could be retained. It all still depends on Terry's condition after he wakes up!"

Johnson was dumbfounded when he heard this.

The forensic doctor went back into the ward and continued to observe Terry's condition.

Johnson stood outside. Then, he suddenly turned and headed outside. When he was about to go down the stairs, he saw Lily supporting Quentin as he walked about in the corridor.

Shockingly enough, Quentin, whose body had been limp all over, could already walk a great distance without any help or stops.

Lily was even giving him compliments. She said, "Nice! Your recovery is progressing so fast!"

Quentin explained, "Yeah, I can feel my body repairing itself bit by bit every day. I can feel the bones growing, it's as if something is bubbling inside me... It's amazing! I'd always known that Nora's medical skills were amazing, but I didn't expect them to be this good!"

Lily also nodded. "I finally understand why people are chasing after the gene serum. It's simply too amazing!"

Johnson kept walking downstairs as he listened to their conversation.

He lit up a cigarette downstairs in the hospital and started smoking, his emotions becoming more and more irritable.

He extinguished the cigarette butt and tossed it into the trash can. Only then did he get into his car and make his way to the special department.

As soon as he stepped inside the special department, everyone there gathered around him. They looked at him and asked, "Captain Johnson, what happened to Captain Ford? Did he really violate the regulations?"

"Captain Johnson, shouldn't Mark be released by now?" The attitude of the people in the department towards Johnson had clearly become a lot more enthusiastic than before, all just because Morris hadn't immediately taken revenge for Janson when the accident happened. This had made everyone unhappy with him.

Johnson smiled and replied, "He's fine, they are just trying to thoroughly investigate what had happened. All of you are also aware that Captain Ford's way of doing things is too non-compliant with the rules. Sigh! Alright, let's just free Mark for now! Also, you all shouldn't be gathering here. Go and do what you're supposed to be doing!" Everyone nodded.

They wanted to say more, but Johnson had already entered his office. He took out another cigarette and started to smoke. He was still waiting-waiting for further news from the hospital about Terry's condition. Brain damage could lead to many different scenarios. He couldn't take any risks yet!

After some time, it gradually turned dark outside.

Someone suddenly pushed open the door to Johnson's office. An excited Mark rushed in and said, "Johnson, I think Karl is about to be convicted of his crimes!"

Johnson was surprised. "What do you mean?"

Mark replied, "Janson just contacted me and said that Terry opened his eyes today! He obviously wanted to say something, but because he couldn't control

his body yet, he couldn't speak. Janson also said that Terry will be able to speak after another day's time. When that happens, we will have a testimony! Let's see what Karl has to say after that!"

Panic entered Johnson's eyes, but he nevertheless feigned surprise and said, "Really? That's great!"

After Mark reported the "good news", he left the office.

Johnson stayed in the office for a while more. He suddenly extinguished the cigarette. A sharp look flashed in his eyes. After that, he went out and called Mark over.

He instructed, "Interrogate Karl overnight and try your best to get him to confess to his crimes! This will be a gift for Terry once he wakes up!"

A fierce look appeared in Mark's eyes. "Don't worry, I will definitely get you a satisfactory outcome!"

Johnson nodded. "I'll head to the hospital and watch over Terry, and strive to get a statement from him! This way, we'll be able to have Karl convicted as quickly as possible!"

"Yes, sir."

Johnson then went out and drove off. However, he did not go to the hospital. He stopped by a pharmacy and bought some drugs capable of instantly suffocating someone...

When Johnson arrived at the hospital, he found Janson asleep outside Terry's ward.

He looked around vigilantly.

As a professional with many years of experience in the industry, he had been suspecting all this time that all of this was just a trap that Morris and Nora were trying to lure him into.

Even though the two of them had been taken away by the inspection unit, Johnson did not let his guard down in the least.

He had always been a perceptive, paranoid, and meticulous person. Otherwise, he would not have become Morris' mentor back then.

His rash, irritable, and upright personality on the surface was all just a disguise to establish a sense of harmlessness to the leaders above, so that he would be promoted quickly.

As facts had proven, he had indeed succeeded.

That act of his had deceived a lot of people. All of them had let their guard down around him. In fact, the people involved in innumerable workplace traps back then had all underestimated him because of his disguised carelessness, allowing him to make comebacks and turn defeat into victory.

Thus, even at this moment, Johnson's first reaction was not to enter the ward in a hurry and kill Terry, but to observe the surroundings.

With his years of experience and surprisingly sharp intuition, he made sure that there wasn't anyone watching him in the surroundings and that he wasn't being plotted against by anyone. At last, he lightly pushed open the door to the ward and went in.

In the ward, Terry was lying on the bed. He had lost a lot of weight due to his coma over the past few days. His head was wrapped in white gauze, and he was unconscious, his eyes closed.

The first thing Johnson did was inspect the ward. Even after confirming that there weren't any surveillance cameras there, he did not immediately inject the toxic chemicals into Terry. Instead, he observed his vitals.

His heart rate was maintained at a little past sixty and was very stable. Although it was a little slower than normal, it was still considered healthy.

The other numbers were also indeed very good, which indicated that Terry was alive and recovering

The gene serum was indeed impressive.

With that in mind, Terry avoided all the angles that might allow one to photograph him, took out the deadly chemicals from his pocket, and injected them right into Terry.

He moved smoothly in one go without any hesitation whatsoever, fully exhibiting the competency of a professional.

When he was done, he took a step back. Shortly after, the monitor emitted a sharp beep. He gave Janson a push before he even woke up. Then, he shouted, “Janson, quick, come over and take a look! What’s the matter with Terry?”

Janson opened his eyes in a daze. Upon hearing the warning alarm from the monitor, blood drained from his face. The hospital staff had also rushed over by then. Unfortunately, the heart rate monitor was only showing a straight line.

Terry was dead.

He had died a day after being injected with the gene serum. The cause of death was cardiac arrest, which seemed like a heart attack, yet also seemed like it was caused by the gene serum.

His body was taken away by the people from the inspection unit. Janson was extremely dispirited. Never would he have thought things would turn out like this. Quentin was obviously still well and alive in the ward next door... When news of the incident reached the special department, most of the colleagues felt their hearts sinking.

Johnson quickly returned to the department to counsel everyone. He sighed and said, “The gene serum was nothing good right from the start. Most people have lost their lives after being injected with it. I was already opposed to the idea back when Nora wanted to use it to treat Terry, but they simply refused to listen... And Morris, too. I really don’t know how Nora managed to brainwash him so badly that he actually trusts her so much and goes along with her ridiculous actions!”

The others also sighed.

Janson stared at Johnson.

He had a suspicion in his heart, but he didn’t know whether he should trust Johnson or not. Seemingly sensing his hostility, Johnson walked up to him and said, “Janson, you now understand why I tipped off the inspection unit, right? I really did it for Terry! The gene serum cannot be counted on at all! God knows how much Terry must have suffered during the past few days! I wonder if he could feel any pain when he was unconscious...”

As Johnson spoke, Janson’s eyes reddened.

Johnson sighed and said, "For all his life, Terry had been at odds with the people behind the gene serum. I never expected that he would still have to suffer such torture before his death. Janson, can you understand my good intentions?"

Janson suddenly clenched his fists. Nevertheless, he replied sensibly, "Nora only used the gene serum in order to save my father's life, even though it failed in the end... The real murderer is Karl Moore!"

He said, "I request that we close the case and convict Karl as soon as possible!"

Johnson shook his head and sighed. After a while, he said, "The special department has the right to convict a criminal of their crimes, but the problem is that only the acting director has the right to do that! Now that Morris has been taken away by the inspection unit, no one in the department has the right to do that anymore!"

He frowned at once and said, "I wonder when the investigation into Morris will be completed. Also, when will the new acting director be assigned?"

The moment he said that, Janson was slightly taken aback.

He, who was still in the throes of pain from losing his father, got the vague feeling that Johnson was bringing up the matter because he wanted to fight for power. But before he could say anything, Mark, who was next to him, said angrily, "That's easy! We can jointly propose to remove Captain Ford from his post and then support Captain Johnson as the acting director in the interim! When that happens, you will be able to convict Karl of his crimes!"

Johnson frowned when he heard what he said. "That's... not quite a good idea, is it? Although Morris has done something muddleheaded, it was Nora who had deceived him..."

Mark immediately gritted his teeth and said, "Captain Ford has indeed become muddleheaded! The way he looks at Nora isn't right. For so many years, he has always been firm and impartial, but how many outlandish things has he done for Nora? All I did was interrogate Karl for a short while the other time, yet he actually locked me up!"

Mark and Janson were best buddies. He often went over to their place for meals. As his senior, Terry had also taught him a lot, and he had benefited a lot from his teachings.

That was why Mark was so worked up. He didn't even wait for Johnson to speak and immediately said, "A lot of people in the department think so too. Just wait for it, Captain Johnson, I'll take care of this!"

After speaking, Mark ran off.

Janson looked at him from the back, his eyes were all red.

A day later, the inspection unit came to the special department, planning to investigate the incident about Terry and also to announce the final outcome. As the incident had blown up a great deal in the special department, and also because Morris had gone against everyone's will to protect Karl, they had decided to hold a huge conference to resolve the matter.

Seeing everything going smoothly, Johnson finally relaxed. He felt that things were undoubtedly going very smoothly and there wouldn't be any unexpected issues.

Karl's case had already been reported to the organization. Many people knew about this matter, and it attracted wide attention. Of course, this was still Captain Johnson's doing

Morris was powerful and had accumulated a lot of connections over the years. After the incident, many people had spoken up for him and put pressure on the inspection unit. The inspection unit had originally planned to let Morris be released early, but with Old Terry's death along with Captain Johnson's actions, it was not appropriate to let him go. After all, if they were to forcefully let him go now, it would probably arouse the displeasure of the crowd.

The large conference room of the special department could accommodate a hundred people. All the staff members of the special department were present. Morris had broken the law and helped Nora give Old Terry the gene serum. This matter was going to be judged today. After all, Morris's actions at that time were to save people, so the inspection unit did not know how to punish him.

At this moment, the meeting room was fully packed.

Most of the people inside were divided into two parts.

A portion of them was of Morris's loyal supporters. They had worked with him for many years and believed in him. They even said, "Captain Ford is also doing this to save people! If there are lives in danger, would we not prioritize saving people over violating some rules?"

The other group was led by Mark.

Janson was heartbroken and depressed, but Mark was indignant and retorted, "Then why didn't he convict Karl even after so long? He didn't even allow me to interrogate him! There must be something wrong!"

"That's right. Don't we know what gene serums are? They're harmful! They're poison! This is what we've been fighting against. Over the years, how many colleagues have been sacrificed to fight against the mysterious organization that makes this gene serum? In the end, you want to use this thing on one of our own? How ridiculous!"

The person supporting Morris said, "But Captain Ford did it to save people!" "But Old Terry is dead! He's not saved! The facts have proven that we were right! Captain Ford is too extreme. The special department has even become his one-man hall! Also, why is the trial against Karl Moore delayed? We clearly have all the evidence!"

As the crowd was in a heated argument, the door to the meeting room was pushed open. Then, accompanied by a staff member from the inspection unit, Morris strode into the meeting room.

The moment he entered, the entire conference room instantly became silent.

Everyone looked at him.

As he had been detained for two days, a black beard had appeared on Morris's chin. At this moment, he looked more like a mature man.

His gaze was like an eagle as it swept across everyone present, causing them to shut their mouths.

Morris and a few people from the Ministry of Supervision sat on the stage and looked down. One of them then started speaking, "Alright, now the special department is divided into two factions regarding Morris's situation. One half

thinks that Captain Ford has been negligent in his work. As long as he apologizes to Janson, this matter will be over. The other half thinks that Captain Ford has used illegal drugs from the special department recklessly and seriously violated the law. He should be dismissed from his post till further investigation! Now, we want to ask the public's opinion!"

As soon as he said this, the two sides started arguing again.

Their words were the same as earlier.

Looking at the heated discussion, Captain Johnson suddenly said, "Um, I'll say something. Everyone, please listen to me."

He sighed and said, "I was the one who brought Morris into this industry. Now that I'm going to judge him, I really can't bear it. But there's nothing I can do. He has done something wrong and made some bad judgments! If anyone gets hurt in the future and says that the gene serum can be used to save lives, will he break the law and take it out again? We have to firmly put an end to such things! Therefore, in this situation, I suggest reducing the punishment for Morris. A dismissal is too serious. We should let him work from the bottom again and punish him with three months of salary cut as a show of service. I wonder if anyone has any objections?"

This kind of neutralized opinion instantly shook the people below.

Those who originally thought that Morris should be punished but still had some feelings for him and could not bear to remove him from the Investigation Committee immediately nodded.

Those who were originally on Morris's side also felt that this plan was reasonable...

For a moment, this proposal from Captain Johnson received the agreement of most people!

Mark stood up as well. "To be honest, Captain Ford has indeed worked hard and provided meritorious service all these years. I think it's too big of a punishment for him to be dismissed. I can't bear for Captain Morris to leave either. I think what Captain Johnson has said can be done! If he starts from the bottom again, I believe Captain Ford will be able to rely on his contributions to return to this position quickly!"

Everyone nodded. "Yes."

When Captain Johnson heard this, he was very satisfied.

He was doing this on purpose!

Morris had too many connections and too deep of a background. He could not possibly slap Morris to death. He could only take a step back and let him resign. Then, the chair of the Special Case Department Head would be his now!

This was his goal.

Seeing that everyone below had agreed, the people from the inspection unit then looked at Morris. "Captain Ford, do you have any objections to this punishment?"

With that, everyone looked at Morris.

Morris lowered his eyes. After a moment, he suddenly looked up and said slowly, "Yes."

Everyone fell silent again.

Captain Johnson frowned. "Morris, this punishment is already very light. You knew the rules and violated them, so you have to pay the price. People can't just be forgiven when they've done something wrong!"

"You're right."

Morris laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. "It's very hard to cover up when you've done something wrong. What about a murderer? Compared to my mistake, isn't your mistake more serious?"

These words made Captain Johnson's pupils shrink. He sneered and said, "Morris, Karl keeps saying that I killed Old Terry, but do you really trust him over me? You've really disappointed me. Do you have any evidence to say that I have killed someone?"

"Of course."

Morris said slowly, "Not only do I have evidence, but I also have a witness!"

With that, he looked at the door. He was clearly here to be judged, but he turned the tables and said, "Come in."

Accompanying this sentence, Nora strode in lazily and yawned, pushing a wheelchair along.

Her face was filled with impatience as if she had not slept enough. Her expression was not very good.

However, no one noticed that at the moment. Everyone's attention was on the person in the wheelchair.

It was Old Terry.

When Old Terry appeared on the scene, the entire audience was shocked.

Janson stood up in shock and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Why was his father here?

He should be in the hospital's mortuary. While Janson was so shocked, Captain Johnson's heart was already in turmoil!

Old Terry... He was clearly dead!

He couldn't be alive after he had drugged him.

He swallowed hard and looked at Old Terry in horror. The person who had appeared there was like a demon! A demon that had climbed out of hell.

Before Captain Johnson could speak, Janson's eyes were already red. He took a step forward. "Dad, you're still alive?"

Old Terry's head was wrapped in gauze. The gauze on his head covered half his head, and the other half was horribly swollen. His voice seemed to be blocked by something in his throat. It was very hoarse, and it was very uncomfortable to hear.

He slowly said, "I'm not dead, I'm still alive."

It was really him!

Everyone present widened their eyes. Why was he still alive?

Old Terry's next answer puzzled everyone. "The gene serum can even restore brain cells. How could I have died?"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He thought that he could rest easy after seeing Old Terry die with his own eyes. However, he did not expect him to be alive! Had the gene serum cured the poison he had injected?

How could... this be?!

Thus, in the end, even if he was meticulous, he had still lost to fate!

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. "Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl's words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson's name!"

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. "Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn't come yesterday was because I couldn't figure out why you had shot me?"

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, "Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. "Old Terry, are you confused? I think you're just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?"

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, "Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even

in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I'd retired him from undercover duty. You didn't tell him, did you?"

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. "Old Terry, I don't know what you're talking about!"

Old Terry sighed again. "You know, I have evidence that he's an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I've never doubted you. Over the years, you've used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don't you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?"

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry's last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, "Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?"

Captain Johnson stammered, "How... how would I know? He didn't buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?"

Old Terry's voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. "We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?"

Captain Johnson was flustered. "You..."

"Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me! You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We've already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can't deny it!"

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, "Captain Johnson, aren't you going to confess now?"

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, "And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you're much better than me? I just want money, but you're in cahoots with the people from the

mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!”

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. “Captain Johnson, what we’re talking about now is your murder charge.” Captain Johnson sneered and said, “I’m at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora’s crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they’ve done is beneficial to humans!” “Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?” “And you, Old Terry. Don’t look at me like that. You’re stupid. You don’t know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I’ve risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?”

He looked around. “Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we’ve been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!”

“Morris, I attempted murder. You’re not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!” If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. “Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. “Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!”

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and

is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl’s innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin’s injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already

collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, “Justin, you were married to your job when you weren’t with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?”

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, “Let’s go home and catch up on your sleep.”

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. “Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!”

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, “It’s about the child! You’ll regret it if you don’t listen!”

About the child?

Justin’s footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. “Miss Ruth, let’s talk!”

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, “I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It’s about the child! His son!”

Lawrence lowered his eyes. “What’s wrong with Pete? Tell me first.”

Ruth’s eyes were firm as she slowly said, “No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won’t say anything until I see him!”

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay

that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!”

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, “The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!”

He didn’t give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, “Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don’t you go home for now?”

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, “Joel, don’t push me. Isn’t it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I’m here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?”

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, “Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it’s all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!”

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel’s voice became even colder. “Grandaunt Sue, don’t force me into taking action against

you!”

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, “Then why don’t you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!”

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving

us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, "Old man, why are you in my house again?"

Karl craned his neck and replied, "I don't have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!"

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, "Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?".

Ever since Joel started calling him "Dad", Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him "Dad", Karl became jealous. "Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He's not eating!"

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"